

BIBLIOT. ISTITUTO  
BOTANICO - PADOVA

Gf.

19



R. ISTITUTO BOTANICO DI PADOVA

Sala

Palco

N. inv.

BICL. H. ORTO  
BOTANICO-PADOVA

19  
N. 2748







R. ISTITUTO BOTANICO DI PADOVA

Sala

6

Palco

N. inv.

BIBL. R. ORTO  
BOTANICO-PADOVA

19

N. 2748









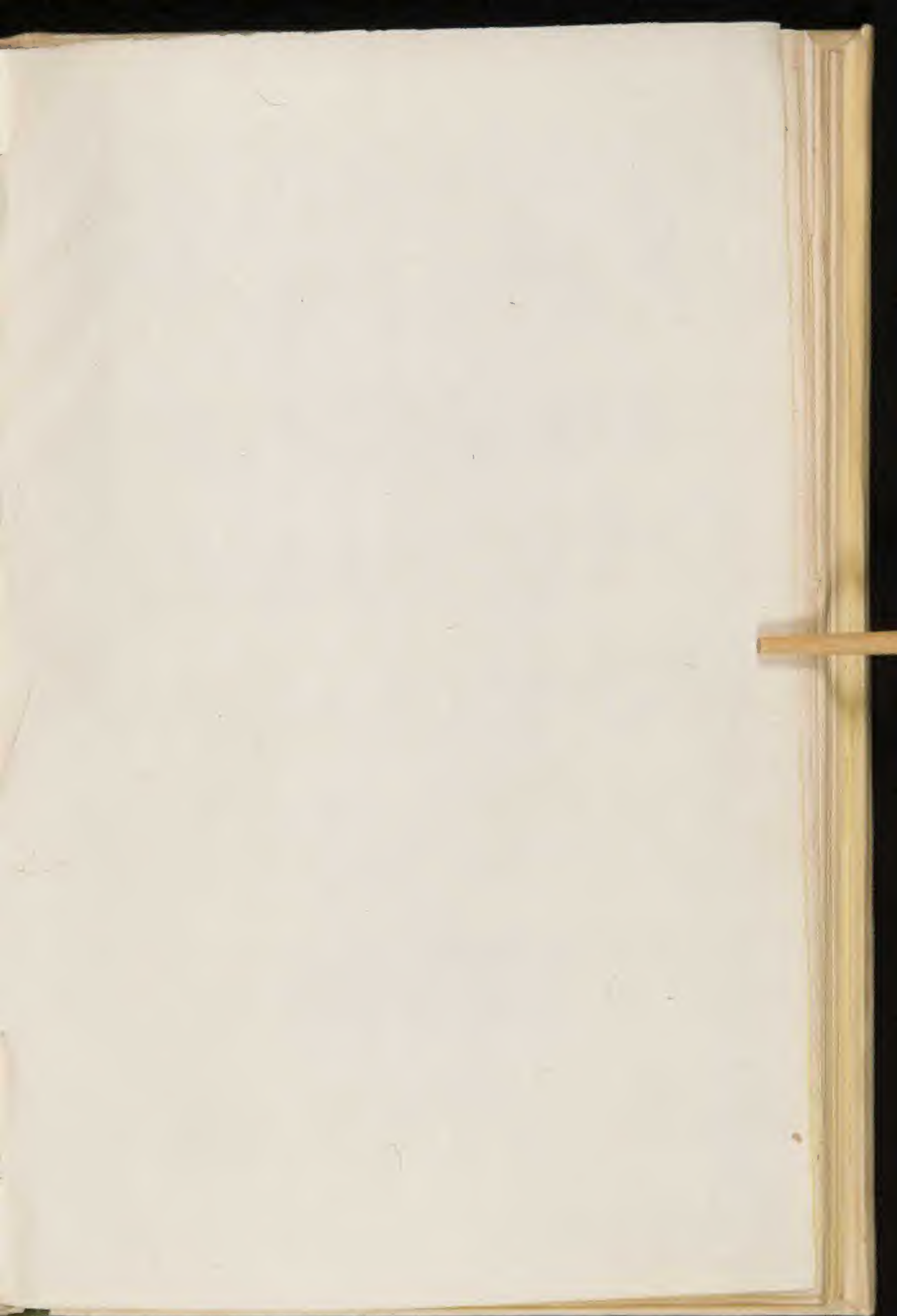


















A TRUE & EXACT  
**HISTORY**  
Of the Island of  
**BARBADOES.**

Illustrated with a Map of the Island, as also the  
Principal Trees and Plants there, set forth in  
their due Proportions and Shapes, drawn out by  
their several and respective Scales.

Together with the Ingenio that makes the Sugar, with  
the Plots of the several Houses, Rooms, and other places, that  
are used in the whole process of Sugar-making; *viz.* the Grinding-  
room, the Boyling-room, the Filling-room, the Curing-  
house, Still-house, and Furnaces;  
All cut in Copper.

---

By *RICHARD LIGON*, Gent.

---



---

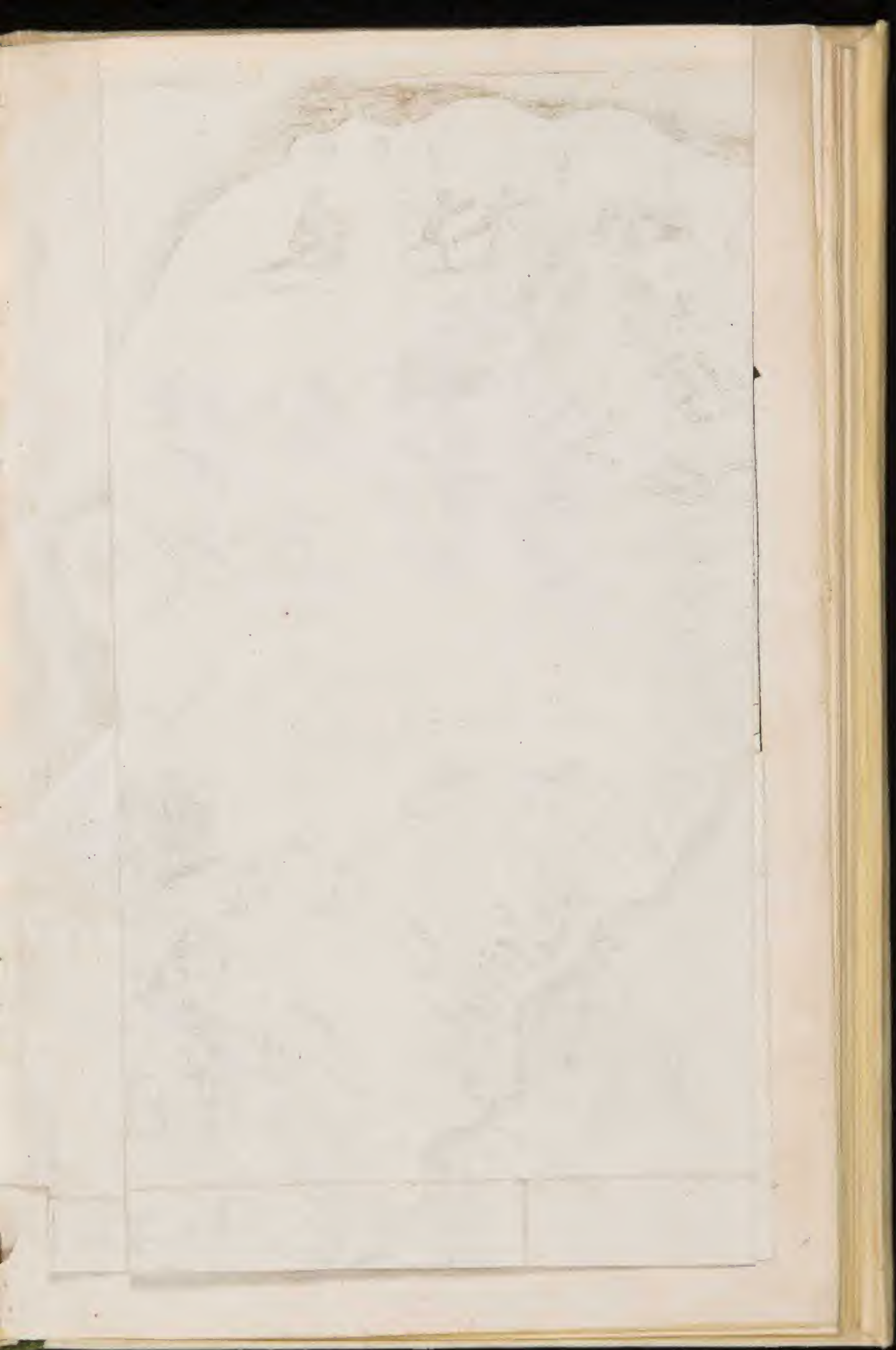
*LONDON,*

Printed, and are to be sold by *Peter Parker*, at his Shop at the *Leg and Star*  
over against the *Royal Exchange*, and *Thomas Guy* at the corner  
Shop of *Little Lumbard-street* and *Cornhill*, 1673.











A topographicall Description and  
Admeasurement of the YLAND of  
BARBADOS in the West INDYAES  
with the III.<sup>ts</sup> Names of the Seuerall plantacons







A TRUE AND EXACT  
HISTORY  
OF THE ISLAND OF  
BARBADOES.

**H**AVING been censur'd by some (whose Judgements I cannot controll, and therefore am glad to allow) for my weakness and Indiscretion, that having never made proof of the Sea's operation, and the several faces that watry Element puts on, and the changes and chances that happen there, from Smooth to Rough, from Rough to Raging Seas, and High going Billows, (which are killing to some Constitutions,) I should in the last Scene of my life, undertake to run so long a Race as from *England* to the *Barbadoes*; And truly I should without their help conclude my self guilty of that Censure, had I not the refuge of an old Proverb to fly to, which is, [*Need makes the old Wife trot*] for having lost (by a Barbarous Riot) all that I had gotten by the painful travels and cares of my youth, by which means I was stript and rifled of all I had, left destitute of a subsistence, and brought to such an Exigent, as I must famish or fly; and looking about for friends, who are the best supporters in so staggering a condition, found none, or very few, whom griefs and afflictions had not depress'd, or worn out, Banishment absented, or Death devour'd; so that in stead of these near and Native comforters, I found my self a stranger in my own Countrey, and therefore resolv'd to lay hold on the first opportunity that might convoy me to any other part of the World, how far distant soever, rather than abide here. I continued not many weeks in this expectation, when a friend, as willing to shift his ground as I, gave me an Overture which I accepted, and so upon the sixteenth day of *June*, 1647. we embark'd in the *Downs*, on the good Ship called the *Achilles*; a vessel of 350 tunns, the Master *Thomas Crowder* of *London*; & no sooner were we all aboard, but we presently weigh'd Anchor, and put to Sea; in so cold weather as at that time of the year, I have not felt the like; and continued so till we came to *Falmouth-Harbour*: where we put in, and rested for a night; but in our passage thither, were very uncertain upon what Coast we were, by reason of the unsteadiness of the winds, and cloudiness of the weather; so that I perceived more troubles and  
B doubts



Graphical Description and  
 Element of the YLAND of  
 OS in the West INDYAES  
 Names of the Seuerall plantacons







A TRUE AND EXACT  
 HISTORY  
 OF THE ISLAND OF  
 BARBADOES.



Having been censur'd by some (whose Judgements I cannot controll, and therefore am glad to allow) for my weakness and Indiscretion, that having never made proof of the Sea's operation, and the several faces that watry Element puts on, and the changes and chances that happen there, from Smooth to Rough, from Rough to Raging Seas, and High going Billows, (which are killing to some Constitutions,) I should in the last Scene of my life, undertake to run so long a Race as from *England* to the *Barbadoes*; And truly I should without their help conclude my self guilty of that Censure, had I not the refuge of an old Proverb to fly to, which is, [*Need makes the old Wife trot*] for having lost (by a Barbarous Riot) all that I had gotten by the painful travels and cares of my youth; by which means I was stript and rifled of all I had, left destitute of a subsistence, and brought to such an Exigent, as I must famish or fly; and looking about for friends, who are the best supporters in so staggering a condition, found none, or very few, whom griefs and afflictions had not depress'd, or worn out, Banishment absented, or Death devour'd; so that in stead of these near and Native comforters, I found my self a stranger in my own Countrey, and therefore resolv'd to lay hold on the first opportunity that might convoy me to any other part of the World, how far distant soever, rather than abide here. I continued not many weeks in this expectation, when a friend, as willing to shift his ground as I, gave me an Overture which I accepted, and so upon the sixteenth day of *June*, 1647. we embark'd in the *Downs*, on the good Ship called the *Achilles*; a vessel of 350 tunns, the Master *Thomas Crowder* of *London*; & no sooner were we all aboard, but we presently weigh'd Anchor, and put to Sea; in so cold weather as at that time of the year, I have not felt the like; and continued so till we came to *Falmouth-Harbour*: where we put in, and rested for a night; but in our passage thither, were very uncertain upon what Coast we were, by reason of the unsteadiness of the winds, and cloudiness of the weather; so that I perceived more troubles and



doubts in the Seamen in that short passage, than in all the voyage after. But, the weather clearing up, the Master and Mates drew out several plots and Landscapes : which they had formerly taken upon the Coast of *France* and *England*, (which are of great use in the narrow Seas,) by which they were well assured where they were; for there they seldome use *Loggline*, or *Backstaff*, but attend onely the Tydes, Compass, and Card; nor is there any use of other directors in so narrow a room. We were (as I remember) about 10 dayes sailing to *Falmouth*, and had with us a small ship of about 180 tunns, called the *Nonesuch*; of which Captain *Middleton* was owner, a very good Seaman, and a Planter in *Barbadoes* : but himself then remaining in *London*.

The next day we put to Sea, and continued our course to the South-west, (with somewhat a Scant wind,) partly to avoid the high going *Billows* of the *Bay* of *Biskey* : but chiefly to stand aloof from *Pirats* and *Pickaroones* : which are very frequent upon the *Coasts* of *Spain*, and *Barbary*; and as we past along, I perceiv'd a difference in the way of our Ships : for in slack winds, our consort the *Nonesuch* would run us out of sight in four or five hours sail; but in strong and stiff winds, we did the like with her. So that I guess'd the larger the sails, the swifter the way; provided, they were alike built in the model of their keeles : but I leave that to be resolved by the Seamen, or that Admirable Architect of Moving-Horses, Mr. *Pett*.

About the Latitude of 45 degrees, we met with a Ship coming from *Guinny*, but bound for *London*; the Captains name was *Blayne*, a very civil Gentleman, who hal'd us, came aboard us, and invited divers Gentlemen that were there aboard his ship : which was a Frigate of about 400 tunns, her Lading *Gold* and *Elephants teeth*; the Man was exceeding civil to us, and gave to every Gentleman of our Company, a present of such rarities as he brought from *Guinny*, and *Bunny*. We stayed together almost a whole day, the weather being very calm, and almost no wind at all; in the evening, a fresh breeze began to blow, which serv'd us both in our several wayes, and so saluting each other with our Ordnance we took leave.

About this time, our Consort the *Nonesuch* parted with us, she directly for the *Carabby* Islands, we for *St. Jago*, one of the Islands of *Cape Verd*; where we were to trade for *Negroes*, *Horses*, and *Cattle*; which we were to sell at the *Barbadoes*. So, keeping our course about 80 Leagues from the Coast of *Spain* and *Barbary*, the first land we discovered, was the Isle of *Porto Santo*; vvhich lyeth in 33 degrees to the *Northward*; vvhich vve left of our *Leeward* side : When presently after, vve had sight of the *Madeira*, vvhich vve saild close by, and had a full viewv of the place; so Rocky, and Mountainous, and the ground so miserably burnt vwith the Sun; as vve could perceiue no part of it either Hill or Valley, that had the least appearance of green, nor any tree bigger than a small *Hathorn*; and very fevv of those. Between this and three inconsiderable Islands called the *Deserts*, which appeared to us like the tops of large buildings; no unevenness or risings and fallings, but level as the top of a large Church or Barn; but burnt worle than the other : so that instead of the fresh and lively greens, other Countreys put on at this time of the year, these were apparel'd



apparel'd with Ruffets, or at best *Phylomorts*. But it fell out that this year the Summer was there hotter than usually, and the Sea-men that were with us, gave us to understand, that they never had seen it so burnt as now, and that the *Leeward* part of it was, at other times, exceeding fruitful and pleasant, abounding with all sorts of excellent fruits, Corn, Wine, Oyl, and the best Sugars; with Horses, Cattle, Sheep, Goats, Hogs, Poultry, of all sorts, and the best sorts of Sea-fish. These Islands lye near 33 degrees to the *Noreward*.

Having past between these (leaving the *Maderas* on our *Starboard* side) we found a constant trade-wind to carry us to the *Southward*. When the next Island that came in our view, was *Lona Vista*; but at such a distance, as we could hardly discern colours, but the general Landſcape of the Hills ſeem'd to us very beautiful, gently riſing and falling, without Rocks or high precipices.

This Island is famous, for excellent Salt, and for Horses, which in our property, excell all that ever I have ſeen; their hooves being to that degree of hardneſs, and toughneſs, that we ride them at the *Barbadoes*, down ſharp and ſteep Rocks, without ſhoes; and no Goats go ſurer upon the ſides of Rocks and Hills than they; and many of them very ſtrong and clean limb'd.

This Island, we left ten Leagues, or thereabouts, on our *Larboard* ſide, and next to it, the Ile of *May*; famous for ſtore of excellent Salt.

The laſt of thoſe Islands was *Palma*; a land ſo high, as after we firſt diſcovered it (which was in the morning) we thought to have reacht it that night, but found our ſelves far ſhort of it next morning, though we had a full gail all that night: ſo much is the eye deceived in Land which lyes high. This Island is about 28 degrees to the *Noreward*, and from it to the Iſles of *Cape Verd* about 13 degrees a long way to be ſilent, for there is no land between; and therefore I purpoſe to entertain you with ſome Sea delights; for there is no place ſo void and empty, where ſome lawfull pleaſure is not to be had, for a man that hath a free heart, and a good Conſcience. But theſe Sea-pleaſures are ſo mixt with Cruelties, as the trouble of the one, abates much the delight of the other; for here we ſee the great ones eat up the little ones, as they do at Land, and with as little remorse; yet laying that conſideration aſide, the Chaſe affords ſome pleaſure to the eyes: for ſome kinds of fiſhes ſhew themſelves above water, for a long while together. I have ſeen 20 Porpiſces very large of that kind, Croſs the Prow of our Ship, one behind another in ſo ſteady and conſtant a courſe, in chaſe of ſome other fiſhes; as I have ſeen a kennel of large Hounds, in *Windsor Forreſt*, in the chaſe of a Stag; one following another directly in a track; and the onely difference I find is, theſe do not ſpend their mouths; but what they want in that is ſupplied by the goodneſs of their noſes; for they never are at a fault, but go conſtantly on. The Dolphins likewiſe purſue the flying Fiſh, forcing them to leave their known watry Elements, and flye to an unknown one, where they meet with as merciless enemies; for there are birds that attend the riſing of thoſe fiſhes; and if they be within diſtance, ſeldom fail to make them their own. Theſe birds, and no other but of their kind, love to ſtragggle ſo far from land; ſo that it may be doubted, whether



the sea may not be counted their natural home; for we see them 500 leagues from any land, at Sun setting; and so it is not possible they should recover Land that night; and on the waves they cannot rest, without great hazard. I have seen them sometimes light, and sit upon the waves, but with such Caution, for fear of being taken in by a fish, as her rest is very unsafe; unless when she is covered by the nights dark wings. This Bird, is a kind of sea Hawk, somewhat bigger than a Lanner, and of that colour; but of a far freer wing, and of a longer continuance, and when she is weary, she finds resting places, if the Seas be Calm; for then the Turtles lye and sleep upon the waves, for a long time together; and upon their backs they sit, and sleep securely; and there, mute, prune, and oyl their feathers; rouse, and do all their Offices of nature, and have room enough for all, for some of those Turtles are a yard broad in the back: we took one with our Long Boat, as he lay sleeping on the water, whose body afforded all the Gentleman, and Officers of the Ship, a very plentiful meal; and was the best meat we tasted, all the time we were at Sea. There are of these kinds of Fishes but two sorts, that continue in the Main; the Loggerhead Turtle, and the Hawks bill Turtle, of which sorts, the latter is the best, and of that kind ours was that we took. There is a third kind, called the Green Turtle, which are of a lesser Magnitude, but far excelling the other two, in wholesomness, and Rareness of taste; but of them hereafter, for I have no mind to part so lightly, with the forenamed Birds of prey: For having been bred a Faulconer in my youth, I cannot but admire the admirable swiftness of wing these birds make. They mount sometimes upon the trayne; to so lofty a pitch: as, if a Faulcon were there, She might be allowed a double Cancellere in her stooping to her game: they do it at one entire down-come. Her ordinary flying for her own pleasure, and not for prey, is commonly more free than the best Haggard Faulcon, that I have ever seen; but the continuance of it makes it the more admirable. At the times they grow hungry, they attend the Dolphins, who are their Spaniels; and where they perceive the water to move, they know they are in Chase of the flying fish; and being near them, they rise like Coveys of Partridges by 12 and 16 in a Covey, and flye as far as young Partridges, that are forkers, and in their flight these birds make them their quarry.

These frightened fishes, sometimes in the night have cross'd our ship, and being stoppt by the shrowds, have fallen down; and with their bodies we have baited hooks, and taken their pursuers the Dolphins; which we have found very excellent meat, being dress'd by a good hand, with Wine, Spice, and sweet herbs, which we never wanted. So here we have excellent hawking, no fear of losing our hawk, by going out at Cheik, or to a Village to Poult, and yet eat of the quarry, and sometimes of the Spaniels, which is an advantage the best Faulconers miss at Land. As for the hunting here, we only see the Chase, but suffer the hounds to flesh themselves upon the quarry, or it may be, a royal fish, such a one as may fill a dish to furnish *Neptunes* table, and by that means we are cozen'd of our quarry. So that as I ever thought on Land, I find the same at Sea, Hawking to be the better sport. I had almost forgot, to tell what kind of fish this flying fish is, which is the



the cause of such excellent sport, both in himself and others, he is just like a Pilchard, but his fins larger, both in breadth and length; and as long as they are wet, so long he flies; and for their mortal enemies the birds, they continue with us from 33 degrees till we come to 15, and then leave us.

At which time and place, another kind undertakes us, not much bigger than a Castrill, and as near that colour as may be, but of another manner of flying: for these fly close to the water, and turn about every wave; so that we often lose sight of them, by interposing of the waves, and think sometimes that a wave has overwhelmed her. The pleasure she gives the eye, is by the giddiness of her flying; and often seems to be lost, and yet (contrary to our expectation) appears again. But I will trouble you no longer with the inhabitants of the Plyant Air, but dive into the Deep, to try what pleasure that Element affords to give you delight.

There is a Fish called a Shark, which as he is a common enemy to Saylers and all others that venture, in Calmes, to commit their naked bodies to the sea (for he often bites off Legs, sometimes Armes, and now and then swallows the whole body, if the Fish be great): So when the Saylers take them, they use them accordingly: Sometimes by putting out their eyes, and throwing them over board; sometimes by mangling and cutting their bodies, fins, and tails, making them a prey to others, who were merciless Tyrants themselves; And in this kind of justice they are very Accurate.

Many of these fishes we took; some by striking with harping Irons, some with Fishgigs, some with hookes; and amongst the rest, one very large, which followed the Ship four hours, before we went about to take him; and perceived before him, a little Fish which they call the *Pilot Fish*; This little guide of his, swims sometimes a yard before him, sometimes more or less, at his pleasure; and in his greatest adversity often cleaves to him, and like a dear friend, sticks closest when he needs him most: for when he is taken, this little fish never fails to fasten himself to his head, or some part near that, and resolves to dye with him. The experience of this we found not only in this great fish, but in all the rest we had formerly taken, for we never took the one without the other. And the Engine we took this great Shark with, was a large Hook, baited with a piece of Beef; which he received into his mouth, his belly being turned upwards, for his mouth being short of his snout a good deal, he could not take it conveniently, his back being upward, by reason his snout drove the line afore it, but as soon as we perceived the bait to be swallowed, we gave a sudden pull, which fastened the hook so, as we were sure the weight of his body would not tear it out: We drew him up, and laid him in the Wast of the Ship, where none durst abide, but the Seamen who dare do any thing.

We had aboard divers mastive Dogs, and amongst them, one so large and fierce, as I have seldom seen any like him; this Dog flew to him with the greatest Courage that might be, but could take no hold of him, by reason of his large roundness and sliminess; but if by chance he got hold of one of his Fins, the Shark would throw him from side to side of the Ship, as if he had been nothing; and doubtless if he had encountred him in his own Element, the Sea, he would have made quick work with him.



Divers of this kind we took, but none so large; he was about 16 foot long, and 10 foot about the middle. Other fishes we took, as the *Bonito*, the *Spanish Maquerell*, the *Albucore*, *Dolphin*, &c. which we found excellent meat, but especially the *Albucore*, which is a fish of such a shape, as it pleased me much to look on. Those we took were not much above a yard long, with forked tayles, the gristles very firm and strong, and the body near that, no bigger than a mans wrist; but suddenly growing upward to such a greatness, as I have seldom seen any like him, and so strong withall, as a sayler, a very strong man, holding one of them fast by the gill, when this fish mov'd but his tail to get loose, gave such a spring, as he had like to have put his arm out of joynt. These kind of fishes, in a clear Sun-shine evening, delight themselves and us, by trying which of them can leap highest above water; so that 'tis a pretty pastime, to see fishes so large, and gloriously colour'd, shew themselves so far above their natural Element, whose shapes and colours gave such variety. But this sport we saw not often.

I will trouble you no more, with mentioning the variety of shapes and colours of fishes, till I come to *St. Jago*; onely one, and that a very small one; for his body is not much bigger than a large Pomegranate, and yet his faculties are such, as may draw more eyes to look on him, and more minds to consider him, than the *Vast Whale*: for though it be true, that his large body, appearing above the surface of the water being in calmes a smooth level superficies, and suddenly appearing, is one of the strangest and most monstrous sights that can be in nature; (and the more admirable, when he is incountred by his two mortal enemies, the *Sword* and *Theshal* fishes: For to shake them off, he leaps more than his own length, above water, and in his fall, beats the sea with such violence, as the froth and foam is seen a quarter of an hour after, White, as when 'tis beaten by a strong West wind against a Rock; and at other times, spouts out the water in great quantities, the height of an ordinary Steeple.) Yet this great Master-piece of Nature, is not in my opinion so full of wonder, nor doth raise the consideration to such a height: as this little fish the *Carvil*, who can when he pleases, enjoy himself with his neighbour fishes, under water; And when he puts on a resolution to try his fortune in another Element, the *Air*, he riseth to the top of the sea, let the billow go never so high, and there without the help of a sayler, Raises up his Main Mast, spreads his sails, which he makes of his own sinews, fits his Rudder and Ballast, and begins his voyage; But to what Coast he is bound, or what Traffick he intends, himself and He that made him only can tell. Fishes there are none to prey on, nor flies, and therefore 'tis not for food he travels. I have seen them 500 leagues from any land: if his Voyage be to any Port, he must have a long time and much patience to get thither; if to sea, he's there already: in one thing he hath the advantage of any ship that ever sailed; for he can go nearer the wind by a point, than the most yare Friggot that ever was built. Which shews how far Nature can exceed Art. Another advantage he has, that in the greatest Tempest, he never fears drowning. Compass, nor Card he needs not, for he is never out of his way; whether than his voyage be for pleasure or profit we are yet to seek.

But



But before we arrive at our next Harbour, *St. Jago*, one of the *Iles* of *Cape Verd*, and now revolted from the King of *Spain*, to the *Portugal*; Let me tell you, one little observation I made of the Ships way; which in slack winds, and dark nights, we saw nothing under water, but darkness; but in stiff winds, and strong gayles, we saw perfectly the keel of the Ship; and fishes playing underneath, as lighted by a torch, and yet the nights of equal darkness. Which put me in mind of a point of Philosophy I had heard discours'd of, among the Learned; That in the Air, Rough hard bodies, meeting with one another, by violent stroaks, Rarefie the Air, so as to make fire. So here, the Ship being of a hard substance, and in a violent motion, meeting with the strong resistance of the waves: (who though they be not hard, yet they are rough, by reason of their saltness,) do cause a light, though no fire, and I may guess, that that light would be fire, were it not quencht by the sea, in the instant it is made; which in his own Element, hath the greater power and predominancy.

But before we came to *St. Jago*, we were to have visited a small Island called *Soll*; by the intreaty of a *Portugal* we carried with us, whose name was *Bernardo Mendes de Sousa*; who pretended, to have a great part of the Island (if not the whole) to be his own; but for that, it lay somewhat out of our way, and we could not recover it, by reason the wind was Cross; and partly for that we were informed by some of the Saylers, who told us it was uninhabited by any, but Goats, Dogs, and the like; and we guess'd, he would (out of a vain glory) shew us something that he call'd his. But the Master, who well knew the Condition of the place, would not lose so much time to no purpose. Which gave some discontentment to the *Portugal*; which he exprest in his Countenance; by a fullen dogged look, till we came to *St. Jago*. But that was but a whetstone, to sharpen a worse humour he was big with; for though our Merchants redeem'd him out of prison in *London*, intending him a Main director in the whole voyage, whose Credulous ears he highly abused, by telling them, That the *Padre Vagado* (Chief Governor of *St. Jago*) was his brother, and that by the power he had with him, to lay all trade open, for Negroes, Horses, and Cattle; which were the Contrabanded goods; By which perswasion, they gave him the power and Command of the ship and goods. But he intended nothing less than the performance of that trust, but instead of it, meant to make prey of both, and of our Liberties, and probably lives to boot, if we had not been very wary of him.

The first thing we perceiv'd in him, was a strange look he put on, when we came near the Island; which caused us to suspect some great and bad design he was bent on, (for being Jolly and very good Company all the Voyage, to change his Countenance when we were near the place where we hop'd to enjoy our selves with happiness and Contentment, was a presage of some evil intent to be put in practice, which hourly we expected; and were all at gaze what part of it was first to be acted; which he (more speedily than he needed) discovered, and it was thus.

Our water, being a good part spent in our passage thither, and we being to make new and large provisions for the remainder of our



Voyage, (carrying Horses and Cattle with us) which we were to take in there; he Commanded the Master, by the power he had over him, to send a shore all the empty Cask he had aboard; with intent to detain them; and so make us comply, by little and little, to his ends. But the Master absolutely denied the Landing our great Cask, but told him he would send our quarter Casks, in our Long boat, and so by making often returns; to fill our Pipes and Buts. But finding himself at a loss in this design, thought good to keep us from any water at all; and so appointed our men to dig in the valley under the Padres house, where he was well assured no Springs of water were to be found. But some of our men, who spoke good *Spanish*, by their enquiries heard, That there was a very good well on the other side of the hill, under the Castle, and were brought to the sight of it by some of the Gountry people; Which when he perceiv'd we had knowledge of, he was much out of Countenance, and used his best eloquence to make us believe he had never heard of that Well.

So finding that this practice would not serve his turn, he tryed another: and that was to command our Master, to carry a shore that part of the Cargo soon that was consign'd for that place, which was Cloath, Bayes, Stuffs of several kinds, Linnen Cloath, Hats with broad brims, such as *Spaniards* use to wear, and were made in *London* purposely to put off there; and these goods being valued, when they were receiv'd at Land, there should be a return made, in Horses, and Cattle. But as we had Cause to suspect him for the Cask, so we had for the Cargo, and so return'd him this answer, that we would not land any of our goods, without receiving the like value in Cattle; and so by parcels to receive the one, and deliver the other.

On which message, we sent the Purser of our ship, that spoke good *Spanish*; But *Bernardo*, being vext to the height that his Plot was discovered, kept him prisoner. We sent another to demand him, which was likewise detained; then we sent three or four more, and some of the Soldiers of the Castle gave fire upon them. So that we resolv'd to weigh Anchor and put to Sea for a week or ten dayes, and return in the night (the weather being dark and fit for our purpose) and surprise the Padres house with 50 Musquettiers, which we could muster very well of the Gentlemen and other passengers in the ship, and some of the Saylers, and take the *Padre Vagago*, and *Bernardo Mendes de Sousa*, and carry them to the *Barbadoes*. But the Padre not knowing of this design in *Bernardo*, sent to us a very kind message, inviting himself aboard our ship, receiving hostages from us, and so upon treaty with him aboard, settled a trade, and got our prisoners releas'd; whereupon we were invited to his house, or rather his Rock, for it was most part of it form'd in a Rock, with a steep and very high precipice.

But I am mislead into this digression by this wicked *Portugal*, whose unlucky Countenance before we came to the *Island*, gave me the occasion to say somewhat of him, and his miscarriage in the *Island*, before I came at it.

But when we came within sight of it, it appeared to us full of high and steep Rocks, (the highest of which were meer stone, without any soyl at all) and they of so great a height, as we seldom saw the tops, whilst we lay before it; being interposed by mists, and Clouds, which rise and darken the sky in the time of the *Turnado*. But the day we



we had the first sight of it, being very clear ; and we being at a competent distance, had a perfect view of it.) But those of the second altitude, appear'd not so white, but had a grayish colour, as if covered with light and sandy earth. But the lowest of those, seem'd rather Hills, than Rocks ; but yet no russet, as we were in doubt whether grass did ever grow on them. But when we came within distance of discerning colour perfectly ; we expected the valleys, as they opened to us, would have afforded our eyes a richer prospect, with more variety of colours, but we found very little or no amendment, only the trees of *Cocoanuts*, with some other that were large and beautiful, whose tops (giving amply proportionable shadows to their roots) held their greenness, and were extream beautiful. But the time of our stay there, being the *Turnado*, when the Sun (being in his return from the Tropique of Cancer, to that of Capricorn, to visit and refresh the Southern world,) became *Zenith* to the Inhabitants of that part of the world ; which is about the beginning of *August* : At which time the rains fall in abundance, and is accounted winter, to those parts where the *Zenith* is, and we staying there 19 or 20 dayes, ( the rain falling a good part of that time,) we perceived the valleys to put on new liveries : so fresh, so full of various greens, intermixt with flowers of several kinds, some growing on stalks, some on trees, so full of variety, of the most beautiful colours, as if Nature had made choice of that place to shew her Master piece. So that, having feasted our eyes with this delighted object, we desired to try whether their smell was as pleasant and odoriferous, as their beauty was admirable ; and to satisfy our selves of this curiosity, would willingly have gone a shoar, but we were advised to stay a little, till we were better assured of our *Portugal Bernardo*. Which stay, gave us time to take a view of the Harbour or Bay, which they call the *Pry*, and is about a league over from Land to Land. And, as I guess'd, somewhat more ; from the points of Land, to the bottom ; and, as we enter, we leave a small Island on our Larboard side.

This Bay or *Pry*, lyes to the *Leeward* of the Island ; by reason whereof we found so great, so insufferable heat, as you will hardly imagine that bodies coming out of cold Climates, could indure such scorching without being suffocated.

I had in a Cabinet two pieces of hard wax, in the hold of the ship both melted and clave together ; and the Cement of that Cabinet, that was made to hold the Ink, melted and became flat.

So that finding the *Air* so torridly hot, I thought good to make tryal of the water ; and I leapt into the Sea, which appeared to my sense no more colder than the *Air* ; than the Queens bath (at *Bathe*) is hotter in *June* here in *England*.

At the bottom, or inward part of the *Pry*, there appeared to us, a fair round rising hill, near half the breadth of the *Pry*, not much unlike the *How* at *Plimouth*, with a valley on either side ; And on the brow of the Hill towards the right hand, a very high and steep precipice of a Rock ; in which stood the house of the *Padre Vagado*, fixt on the top of the Rock. A house fit enough for such a Master ; for though he were the chief Commander of the Island : yet by his port and house he kept he was more like a *Hermite*, than a Governour. His family consisting of a *Molotto* of his own getting, three *Negroes*, a Fidler, and a Wench.



Himself a man grave enough to be wise, but certainly of no great learning; for upon the differences between *Bernardo* and us, Colonel *Maldiford* writ him a Letter in *Latine*, which he did his best endeavour to answer, but fell the two bows short, substance and language; and though his Quarrel were to us, yet he revenged himself on *Priferian*, whose head he broke three or four times in his Letter.

The first time we saw him, was at his own house, by his own invitation: to which almost inaccessible habitation, when we had climed with infinite difficulty; and indeed so painful and violent was our motion (our legs finding the motion of elevation, much more violent then of distention,) as we were almost scalded within; and the torrid heat of the Sun, being then our *Zenith*, did so scald us without, as we were in fitter condition to be fricased for the *Padres* dinner, than to eat any dinner our selves.

Being painfully and pipeing hot, arriv'd at this exalted mansion; we found none to entertain us but *Bernardo*; whose countenance was not so well reconcil'd to himself, as to give us a hearty welcome. He told us that the *Padre* was gone forth about some affairs of the Island, but would return time enough to dinner. And whilst we were staying there, expecting his coming, we thought good not to be idle, for the structure of that Fabrick, did not minister to our eyes much of delight; Onely that it had a fair prospect to sea. So we walk'd along upon that round hill, enquiring what we could of the place; and were inform'd that there had been formerly a very stately Town, beautified with fair buildings, and streets so contrived, as to make the best use of such a prospect; But burnt and demolish'd by Sir *Francis Drake*, in the time of the wars, between Queen *Elizabeth*, and the King of *Spain*, which made us give more reverence to the place; for that some of our Countreymen had there sacrificed their lives for the Honour of our Nation.

About the hour that our stomachs told us, it was full high time to pay Nature her due, we lookt about us, and perceived at a good distance, a horse coming towards us, with a man on his back, as hard as his heels could carry him; and within a very little time, made a sudden stop at the *Padres* house, from whose back (being taken by two *Negroes*) was set on the ground a great fat man, with a gown on his back, his face not so black as to be counted a *Molotto*, yet I believe full out as black as the Knight of the Sun; his eyes blacker if possible, and so far sunk into his head, as with a large pin you might have prick'd them out in the nape of his neck. Upon his alighting we perceiv'd him very much discomposed, for the pace he rid, was not his usual manner of riding, as by our enquiry afterwards we understood; and that he very seldom rid at all, but his business having held him over long, caus'd him to take horse, who intended to come a foot; and being mounted, (and he none of the best Horsemen,) was made subject to the will of his horse; which being a Barb, and very swift of foot, coming towards the place where he was kept, ran with such violence, as it was a wonder his burthen had not been cast by the way; for the Horse having a bit in his mouth, and the stirrups being extream short, as the manner of their riding there is, if he had ever checkt him with the bridle, that he had been put to bound, he had undoubtedly lay'd him on the ground. But the rider that thought



of nothing more, then holding fast by the pummel with both hands, was miraculously preserv'd.

In this great discomposure, he was taken off by two *Negroes*, and set on his own legs: but in such a trance, as for some minutes, he was not in a Condition to speak to us: So sensible an impression had the fear of falling made in him. But being at last come to himself, he made his address to us, and in his language bid us welcom, beginning to excuse his too long stay: to redeem which fault, he had put himself in such a hazard, as in his whole life he had not known the like. We answered, that it argued a great respect and civility to us, that he would expose his gravity, which was accustomed to a moderate pace, to such a swiftness of motion, as might in any kind endanger his health, or hazard his person. But he being a man much reserv'd, and slow of language, said no more; but brought us into his house; which was upon a level at the entrance, but the other side of the Rooms a steep precipice, and some of the rooms like galleries, such as are in the meanest *Inns* upon *London-way*. There were not in the house above four rooms, besides two galleries and a Kitchen; and those all on a floor; and the floors of earth, not so much as made Level, nor so even as to deserve sweeping; and the most of them were justly dealt withall: for they had no more than they deserv'd, both above and below; for the Cobwebs serv'd for hangings, and stying pans and grid-irons for pictures.

By this equipage, you may guess what the trading is of this Island, when the Governour is thus accoutred; but by and by, a Cloath was laid of Calico, with four or five Napkins of the same, to serve a dozen men. The first Course was set on the table, usher'd in by the *Padre* himself, (*Bernardo*, the *Mollotto*, and *Negroes* following after,) with every one a dish of fruit, six in all; the first was Millions, Plantines the second, the third Bonanos, the fourth of Guavers, the fifth of Prickled Pears, the sixth the Custard Apple: but to fill up the table, and make the feast yet more sumptuous, the *Padre* sent his *Mollotto*, into his own Chamber, for a dish which he reserv'd for the Close of all the rest; Three *Pines* in a dish, which were the first that ever I had seen, and as far beyond the best fruit that grows in *England*, as the best *Abricot* is beyond the worst *Slow* or *Crab*.

Having well refresh'd our selves with these excellent fruits, we drank a glass or two of Red Sack; a kind of wine growing in the *Andros*; very strong, but not very pleasant; for in this Island, there is made no wine at all; nor as I think any of grapes, so near the Line upon Islands in all the world. Having made an end of our fruit, the dishes were taken away, and another Course fetcht in; which was of flesh, fish, and sallets; the sallets being first plac'd upon the table: which I took great heed of, being all Novelties to me, but the best and most flavoury herbs that ever I tasted, very well seasoned with salt, Oyle, and the best Vinegar. Several sorts we had, but not mixt, but in several dishes, all strange, and all excellent. The first dish of flesh, was a leg of a young sturk, or a wild Calf, of a year old; which was of the Colour of stags flesh, and tasted very like it, full of Nerves and sinews, strong meat, and very well Condited: boyl'd tender, and the sauce of flavoury herbs, with *spanish* Vinager. Turkies and Hens we had roasted; a gigget of young goat; fish in abundance of several



kinds, whose name I have forgotten, Snappers, grey and red; Cavallos, Carpions, &c. with others of rare colours and shapes, too many to be named in this leaf; some fryed in oyl, and eaten hot, some souc't, some marinated: of all these we tasted, and were much delighted.

Dinner being near half done, (the Padre, *Bernardo*, and the other black attendants, waiting on us) in comes an old fellow, whose complexion was raised out of the red Sack; for near that Colour it was: his head and beard milk white, his Countenance bold and cheerful, a Lute in his hand, and play'd us for a Novelty, The *Passame sares galiard*; a tune in great esteem, in *Harry* the fourths dayes; for when *Sir John Falstaff* makes his Amours to Mistress *Doll Tear-sheet*, *Sneake* and his Company, the admired fiddlers of that age, playes this Tune, which put a thought into my head, that if Time and Tune be the Composites of Musick, what a long time this Tune had in sayling from *England* to this place. But we being sufficiently satisfied with this kind of Harmony, desired a song; which he performed in as Antique a manner; both favouring much of Antiquity; no Graces, Double Relishes, Trillos, Gropos, or Piano forte's, but plain as a packstaff; his Lute too, was but of ten strings, and that was in fashion in King *David's* dayes; so that the rarity of this Antique piece, pleas'd me beyond measure.

Dinner being ended, and the Padre well near weary of his waiting, we rose, and made room for better Company; for now the Padre, and his black Mistress were to take their turns; A Negro of the greatest beauty and majesty together: that ever I saw in one woman. Her stature large, and excellently shap'd, well favour'd, full ey'd, and admirably grac'd; she wore on her head a roll of green Taffaty, strip'd with white and Philiamort, made up in manner of a Turbant, and over that a sleight vayle, which she took off at pleasure. On her body next her Linnen, a Peticoat of Orange Tawny and Sky colour; not done with Strait stripes, but wav'd; and upon that a mantle of purple silk, ingrayld with straw colour. This Mantle was large, and tyed with a knot of very broad black Ribbon, with a rich Jewel on her right shoulder, which came under her left arm, and so hung loose and carelessly, almost to the ground. On her Legs, she wore buskins of wretched Silk, deck'd with Silver lace, and Fringe; Her shooes, of white Leather, lac'd with sky colour, and pink'd between those laces. In her ears, she wore large Pendants, about her neck, and on her arms, fair Pearls. But her eyes were her richest Jewels, for they were the largest, and most oriental that I have ever seen.

Seeing all these perfections in her only at passage, but not yet heard her Speak; I was resolv'd after dinner, to make an Essay what a present of rich silver, silk, and gold Ribbon would do, to perswade her to open her lips: Partly out of a Curiosity, to see whether her teeth were exactly white, and clean, as I hop'd they were; for 'tis a general opinion, that all *Negroes* have white teeth; but that is a Common error, for the black and white, being so near together, they set off one another with the greater advantage. But look nearer to them, and you shall find those teeth, which at a distance appear'd rarely white, are yellow and foul. This knowledge wrought this Curiosity in me, but it was not the main end of my enquiry; for there was now, but one thing more, to set her off in my opinion, the rarest black



swan that I had ever seen, and that was her language, and graceful delivery of that, which was to unite and confirm a perfection in all the rest. And to that end I took a Gentleman that spoke good *Spanish* with me, and awaited her coming out, which was with far greater Majesty, and gracefulness, than I have seen Queen *Anne*, descend from the Chair of State, to dance the Measures with a Baron of *England*, at a *Malque* in the Banqueting house. And truly, had her followers and friends, with other perquisites (that ought to be the attendants on such a state and beauty) waited on her, I had made a stop, and gone no farther. But finding her but slightly attended, and considering she was but the *Padres* Mistress, & therefore the more accessible, I made my address to her, by my interpreter; and told her, I had some Trifles made by the people of *England*, which for their value were not worthy her acceptance, yet for their Novelty, they might be of some esteem, such having been worn by the great Queens of *Europe*, and intreated her to vouchsafe to receive them. She with much gravity, and reservedness, opened the paper; but when she lookt on them, the colours pleased her so, as she put her gravity into the loveliest smile that I have ever seen. And then shew'd her rows of pearls, so clean, white, orient, and well shaped, as *Neptunes* Court was never pay'd with such as these; and to see whether was whiter, or more Orient, those or the whites of her eyes, she turn'd them up, & gave me such a look, as was a sufficient return for a far greater present, and withall wisht, I would think of somewhat wherein she might pleasure me, and I should find her both ready & willing. And so with a graceful bow of her neck, she took her way towards her own house; which was not above a stones cast from the *Padres*. Other addresses were not to be made, without the dislike of the *Padre*, for they are there as jealous of their Mistresses, as the *Italians* of their wives.

In the afternoon we took leave, and went aboard; where we remained three or four dayes; about which time, some passengers of the ship, who had no great store of linnen for shift, desired leave to go ashore, and took divers women along with them, to wash their linnen. But (it seem'd) the *Portugals*, and *Negroes* too, found them handsome and fit for their turns, and were a little Rude, I cannot say Ravish'd them; for the Major part of them, being taken from *Bridewel*, *Turnball* street, and such like places of education, were better natur'd than to suffer such violence; yet complaints were made, when they came aboard, both of such abuses, and stealing their linnen.

But such a praise they gave of the place, as we all were desirous to see it: for, after the Rain, every day gave an increase to the beauty of the place, by the budding out of new fruits and flowers.

This was the valley on the left side of the Hill, more spacious and beautiful by much than that on the right hand, where the *Padre* dwelt. The next day, a dozen Gentlemen of our company, resolv'd to go and see this so much admired valley; and when our Saylers with their long boat went to fetch water, (as daily they did,) we went along with them, and landed there, in as high going Billovs, as I have ever seen, so near the land. Much ado we had, to be carried to land, though on mens backs; and yet the grapple came as near the shoar as they durst bring it, for bulging against the bottom.

No sooner were we landed, but the Captain of the Castle, with one Soldier with him; came towards us, with a slow formal pace;



who desired to speak with one of us alone. Colonel *Modiford*, being the chief man in the Company, went with an Interpreter to meet him; and being at the distance of speech, desired to know his pleasure; which he told him was this. That he understood divers of our women had been ashoar, the day before; and received some injury, from the people of the Island, and that it was conceiv'd, we were come Arm'd to take revenge on those that did the affront. He therefore advised us, either to make speedy return to the boat that brought us: or to send back our swords and pistols, and commit our selves to his protection; and if one of those were not presently put in act, we should in a very short time have all our throats Cut.

We told him we had no intention of revenge for any wrong done, and that the only cause of our landing, was to see the beauty of the place we had heard so much Commended, by our people that were ashoar, of which they had given a very large testimony, both of the pleasantness and fruitfulness of it, and that our visit was out of love, both to the place and people. But for sending our weapons back to the boat, we desired his pardon; for this reason, that the Billovs going so very high at that time, we could not send them to the boat without being dipt in the Sea water, which would spoil them; and the most of them, being rich swords and pistols, we were loath to have their beauty covered with rust, which the salt water would be the occasion of. We desired rather, that he would Command a Soldier of his, to stay with a man of ours, and keep them safe, till our return; which he being content to do, we committed our selves to his protection, who put a guard upon us of 10 Soldiers, part *Portugals*, part *Negroes*; the most part of either kind, as proper men as I have seen, and as handsomely cloathed.

Their garments made with much Art, and all seem'd to be done by the Tayler; the Coverings for their heads, were not unlike Helmets; of blew and white strip'd silk, some tawny, and yellow, others of other sorts of Colours; but all of one fashion, their doublets close to their bodies, with Cassocks, made of the fashion of the Kings guard: loose sleeves, which came to their elbows; but large and gathered so as to sit loose from their arms; with four large skirts, reaching down to the middle of their thighs; but these of a different colour from their suits, their breeches indifferently large, coming down below the knee; and the upper part, so wrought with Whalebones within, as to keep them hollow, from touching their backs; to avoid heat, which they were much troubled with; upon their legs, buskins of the colour of their suits, yet some made a difference: their shooes colour'd for the most part; some white, but very few black. Their weapons, as Swords, Pistols, Musquets, Pikes, and Partisans, kept very bright, and worn comely and gracefully; which argued a decency in the Commander, as their awful respect did of his austerity.

Being now under a Guard, we marcht into this valley, one of the delightfulest places that I have ever seen, for besides the high and lofty trees, as the *Palmeto*, *Royal*, *Coco*, *Cedar*, *Locust*, *Mastick*, *Mangrove*, *Bully*, *Redwood*, *Pickled yellow wood*, *Cassia*, *Fistula*, *Calibash*, *Cherry*, *Fig-tree*, whose body is large enough for Timber, *Cittrons*, *Custard apple*, *Gnavers*, *Macow*, *Cipres*, *Oranges*, *Lemons*, *Lymes*, *Pomegranat*, *Anotto*, *Prickled apple*, *Prickled pear*, *Papa*, these & more may be accounted wood: & yet a good



good part of them bearing excellent fruit; But then there are of a lesser sort, that bear the rarest fruit; whose bodies cannot be accounted wood, as the *Plantain*, *Pine*, *Banano*, *Melon*, *water Melon*, &c. and some few grapes, but those inconsiderable, by reason they can never make wine: because they have no winter, and so by that means, they can never ripe together, but one is green, another ripe, another rotten, which reason will ever hold, that no wine can be made on Island's, where there is no winter, or within twenty degrees of the line on either side. I have heard that wine is made in the *East Indies*, within less than fifteen Degrees; but 'tis of the Palm-tree; out of whose body, they draw both wine and oyle; which wine will not keep above a day, but no wine of grapes, for the reasons aforesaid. Other kinds of trees, we found good to smell to, as *Mirtle*, *Jesaman*, *Tamarisk*, with a tree somewhat of that bigness, bearing a very beautiful flower. The first half next the stalk, of a deep yellow or gold colour; the other half being the larger, of a rich Scarlet: shap'd like a Carnation, and when the flowers fall off, there grows a Cod, with seven or eight seeds in it, divers of which, we carried to the *Barbadoes*, and planted there: and they grew and multiplied abundantly, and they call them there, the *St. Jago* flower, which is a beautiful, but no sweet flower.

From these woods of pleasant trees, we saw flying divers birds, some one way, some another, of the fairest, and most beautiful colours, that can be imagined in Nature: others whose colours and shapes come short of these, did so excel in sweetness, and loudness of voyce, as our Nightingals in *England*, are short of them, in either of those two properties; but in variety of tunes, our birds are beyond them, for in that they are defective.

In this valley of pleasure, adorn'd as you have heard, we march'd with our Guard, fair and softly, near a quarter of a mile; before we came to the much praised fountain; from whence we fetcht our water. The circle whereof, was about 60 foot, the Diameter about 20 from the ground to the top of the Well, (which was of free-stone,) three foot and a half; from thence within, down to the surface of the water, about fifteen foot. The spring it self, not so much to be praised for the excellency of the taste, though clear enough, as for the Nymphs that repair thither. For whilst we stayed there seeing the Sayers fill their Casks; and whilst contemplating the glory of the place: there appear'd to our view, many pretty young *Negro* Virgins, playing about the Well. But amongst those; two, that came down with either of them a natural Pitcher, a Calibash upon their arm, to fetch water from this fountain. Creatures, of such shapes, as would have puzzel'd *Albert Durer*, the great Master of Proportion, but to have imitated; and *Titon*, or *Andrea de Sarta*, for softness of muscles, and curiosity of Colouring, though with a studied diligence; and a love both to the party and the work. To express all the perfections of Nature, and Parts, these Virgins were owners of, would ask a more skilful pen, or pencil than mine; Sure I am, though all were excellent, their motions were the highest, and that is a beauty no Painter can express, and therefore my pen may well be silent; yet a word or two, would not be amiss, to express the difference betwix these, and those of high *Africa*; as of *Morocco*, *Guinny*, *Binny*, *Cutchow*, *Angola*, *Aethiopia*, and *Mauritania*, or those that dwell near the River.



of *Gambia*, vvho are thick lipt, short nos'd, and commonly lowv fore-heads. But these, are compos'd of such features, as would mar the judgment of the best Painters, to undertake to mend. Wanton, as the soyl that bred them, sweet as the fruits they fed on; for being come so near, as their motions, and graces might perfectly be discern'd, I guess'd that Nature could not, without help of Art, frame such accomplish'd beauties, not only of colours, and favour, but of motion too, which is the highest part of beauty. If dancing had been in fashion in this *Island*, I might have been perswaded, that they had been taught those motions, by some who had studied that Art. But considering the *Padre's* Musick to be the best the *Island* afforded, I could not but cast avay that thought, and attribute all to pure nature; Innocent, as youthful, their ages about fifteen. Seeing their beauties so fresh and youthful, withall the perfections I have named, I thought good to try, whether the uttering of their language, would be as sweet and harmonious, as their other parts were comely. And by the help of a Gentleman that spoke *Portugal*, I accosted them; and began to praise their beauties, shapes, and manner of dressings; which was extreemly pretty. Their hair not shorn as the *Negroes* in the places I have named, close to their heads; nor in quarters, and mazes, as they use to wear it, which is ridiculous to all that see them, but themselves: But in a due proportion of length, so as having their shortenings by the natural Curls, they appeared as Wyers, and Artificial Dressings to their faces. On the sides of their Cheeks, they plat little of it, of purpose to tye small Ribbon; or some small beads, of white Amber, or blew bugle, sometimes of the rare flowers that grow there; Their ears hung with Pendants, their necks and arms adorn'd with bracelets of Counterfeit pearls, and blew bugle; such as the *Portugals* bestow on them, for these are free *Negroes*, and wear upon the small of one of their legs, the badge of their freedom; which is a small piece of silver, or tin, as big as the stale of a Spoon; which comes round about the leg: and by reason of the smoothness, and lightness, is no impediment to their going. Their cloaths, were Petticoats of Strip'd silk, next to their linnen, which reach to their middle leg: and upon that a mantle of blew Taffity, tyed with a Ribbon on the right shoulder: which coming under the left arm, hung down carelessly somewhat lower than the Petticoat, so as a great part of the natural beauty of their backs and necks before, lay open to the view, their breast round, firm, and beautifully shaped.

Upon my addresses to them, they appear'd a little disturb'd; and whispered to one another, but had not the Confidence to speak aloud; I had in my hat a piece of silver and silk Ribbon, which I perceiv'd their well shap'd eyes, often to dart at; but their modesties would not give them Confidence to ask. I took it out, and divided it between them, which they accepted with much alacrity; and in return, drank to one another my health in the liquor of the pure fountain, which I perceiv'd by their vvanton smiles, and jesticulations, and casting their eyes tovwards me: vvhen they thought they had exprest enough, they vvould take in their Countenances, and put themselves in the modestest postures that could be, but vve having brought a Case of bottles, of *English* spirits, vvith us; I call'd for some, and drank a health to them, in a small dram cup; and gave it to one of



of them which they smelt to ; and finding it too strong for their temper, pour'd some of it into one of their Calibashes : And put to it as much water, as would temper it to their palats ; They drank again, but all this would not give them the confidence to speak, but in mute language, and extream pretty motions, shewed they wanted neither wit nor discretion to make an Answer. But it seem'd it was not the fashion there for young Maids to speak to strangers in so publick a place.

I thought I had been sufficiently arm'd with the perfections I found in the Padre's Mistress, as to be free from the darts of any other beauty of that place in so short a time ; but I found the difference between young fresh beauties, and those that are made up with the addition of State and Majesty : for though they counsel and perswade our loves ; yet young beauties force, and so commit rapes upon our affections. In summe, had not my heart been fixed fast in my breast, and dwelt there above sixty years, and therefore loth to leave its long kept habitation, I had undoubtedly left it between them for a Legacy : For so equal were their beauties, and my love as it was not, nor could be particular to either.

I have heard it a question disputed, whether if a horse, being plac'd at an equal distance between two bottles of Hey equally good, and his appetite being equally fix'd upon either, whether that horse must not equally starve. For if he feed on either, it must argue that his appetite was more fixt on that, or else that bottle was better than the other ; Otherwise, what should move him to choose one before the other.

In this posture was I with my two Mistresses, or rather my two halves of one Mistress ; for had they been conjoyn'd, and so made one, the point of my love had met there ; but being divided, and my affection not forked, it was impossible to fix but in one centre.

In this doubtful condition I took my leave, with an assurance that I should never find two such parallel Paragons in my whole search through the world : And the reason of their so great likeness and lustre, was, they were Sisters and Twins, as I was after inform'd by a Hermite that came often to visit us when we came on Land, as we often did, and not far off from his Cell.

But you will think it strange, that a man of my age and gravity should have so much to do with beauty and love : But I have three arguments to protect me ; the first is, I have in my younger dayes been much inclin'd unto painting, in which, art, colour, favour and shape, is exercised ; and these beauties being a proper subject of all these perfections (being in themselves perfect) I could not but consider them with a studied diligence.

Next, I had been long at Sea without setting foot on any Land, and that hath a property to make all Land-objects beautiful ; and these being in the highest degree Paramount, could not but surprize my fancy. Besides, the place being extream beautiful and lovely, could not but secretly harbour in it the spirit of love, a passion not to be govern'd. And therefore I hope you will pardon my wild extravagancy.

But the main reason of this flying out, is, I had little else to say, for the Island being a place of very little or no Traffique, could not afford much of discourse. Cattle they have very good and large, which they sell at very easie rates. And likewise horses of excellent shapes and



mettle, but they are Contrabanded goods, and whosoever deals in them (without special licence) forfeits both Ship and Goods, if they have power to compel them.

But I believe they have not, being partly inform'd by the Hermite, who came often to us to hear news, and beg somewhat of us, which being obtain'd, he would not stick to impart somewhat of the weakness of the Island, that would have cost him dear, if it had been known to the Padre. And some of that which he inform'd us, was, the Forts and Block-houses on either side the *Pry*, on which we saw the appearance of Ordnances good store and large; but we understood by him, that those Forts were neither regular, nor the Guns Brass or Iron, but such as *Henry* the 8th. took *Bulloyne* with, and this we found by experience to be true, for upon our first difference with *Bernardo* and the Padre, we weighed Anchor, and removed our selves out of the distance of the Castle which stood in the bottom of the *Pry*, and expected to be shot at from those Forts and Block-houses, but saw no fire given; and if they had been furnish'd with such Artillery as would have reached us, we should certainly have heard from them.

We also enquired of our Intelligencer, the Hermite, what Trades or Manufactures were practis'd there; but were answered, that they were few and inconsiderable: Sugar, Sweet-meats, and Coco-nuts, being the greatest Trade they had. Yet by the Padre's leave, we carried away with us 50 head of Cattle, and eight Horses, which *Bernardo* made us pay double, for the usual price being 25 s. a piece, for which he made us pay 50 s. and for horses 10 l. a piece, which others have had for 4 or 5 pound, but he was content we should rate our Commodities accordingly, and so we were no great losers by the exchange.

Having dispatch'd our business, we got leave to go ashore upon the little Island, at the entrance of the *Pry*, there to cut and pull grass for our Horses and Cattle, which we made up into Hay, a work quickly done where so much Sun-shine was our helper; it being perfectly dried, we stowed it in our Ship, which was our last work, and so weighed Anchor and hoysed Sail, steering our Course for the *Barbadoes*, leaving *Bernardo* (according to his own desire) behind us, having but two degrees to the Southward, to vary in the running of 620 leagues Westward, *St. Jago* lying in 15, and the *Barbadoes* in 13 degrees and 30 Minutes to the Northward of the Line.

There are seven more Islands, which are call'd the Islands of *Cape Verd*, viz. *St. Michaels*, *St. Vincents*, *St. Anthonies*, *St. Lucia*, *Brava*, *Fogo*, and *Soll*; some of which are much larger, but none so considerable as this of *St. Jago*.

As we lay at Anchor in the entrance of the *Pry*, we perceiv'd at Sunset, between the Sun and us, the Island called *Fogo*, which was at such a distance, that none of us could discern it all the day till that hour, and then the Island interposing between the Sun and us, we saw it perfectly shap'd like the neither half of a Sugar-loaf, the upper half being cut off even, and in the midst of the top of that, a smoak and fire rising out, from which we guess'd it took its name.

About the 10th. of *August* we put out to Sea, and as we sailed, we left the Island of our Starboard-side, and did not part with the sight of it till we discern'd a little Town near to the Shoar, which we were told

was



was the best in the Island, and a place meant for the chief Port for all Traffick in the Island; but by means of a great mischief that Ships were subject to in that Harbour, it was almost totally deserted, for the Sea there was so Rocky in the bottom, and those Rocks so thick together, and sharp withall, as they cut the Cables off near to the Anchor, and so the Anchor is often left in the bottom. There was a *Dutch* man that lay there but three dayes, and in that little stay lost two Anchors.

From this Island to the *Barbadoes*, we account 620 leagues, which by reason of the constancy of the winds, which blow seldom in any other point than Nore East and by East, they have usually sail'd it in sixteen or seventeen dayes; but we, for that it was the time of *Tornado*, when the winds chop about into the South, were somewhat retarded in our passage, and made it twenty two dayes e're we came thither, and many have made it a far longer time, for in the time of *Tornado*, the clouds interpose so thick, and darken the sky, so much as we are not able to make any observation for a fortnight together; and so being doubtful of our Latitude, dare not make the best use of our Sails and way, for fear of slipping by the Island, and being past it, can hardly beat it up again, without putting out into the Main, and so by painful traverses recover our selves to the Eastward of the Island, and then fall back again to the due Latitude upon it at 13 degrees, and 30 minutes.

Besides this pains and loss of time, when we miss the Island, we many times run hazards by falling upon the Leeward Islands in the night, of which the Bay of *Mexico* is well stor'd.

In this long reach (which may be call'd a Voyage it self) I had only two things to make the way seem short, the one was pleasure, the other business; that of pleasure, was to view the heavens and the beauty of them, which were objects of so great glory, that the Inhabitants of the world from 40 degrees to either pole, can never be witnesses of. And this happens at the time when the *Tornado* is with those of that Latitude where we were, for the clouds being exhal'd in great quantities, some thick and gross, some thin and aerial, and being hurl'd and roll'd about with great and lesser curls, the Sun then and there being far brighter than with us here in *England*, caused such glorious colours to rest upon those clouds, as 'tis not possible to be believed by him that hath not seen it, nor can imagination frame so great a beauty; the reason is, the nearness and propinquity of the place we are in, which makes us see the glory of the Sun, and of those Stars which move in that Horizon much more perfectly, than at a further distance, the proof of this I found by looking on the Stars that appear large and bright to us in *England*, which being seen there, do not only lose much of their light, but of their magnitude, for instance, there is a little Star call'd *Auriga* near the *Charles Waine*, which in *England* I have seen very perfectly in bright nights. but at that distance I could never see it in the clearest night, though I have often attempted it. And upon my return to *England*, I found it as I left it; which argues it was no decay or impediment in my sight that made me lose it, but only the distance of place. I deny not but a better sight than mine may see this Star *Auriga* at the *Barbadoes*; but then so good a sight may see it more perfectly in *England* than I can, and so the comparison holds. But another reason to prove the Cælestial bodies brighter at a nearer distance



distance, is, that the Moon being near the full (at which time it gives a plentiful light) I have observ'd in the night, the having been for two hours or thereabouts, and at such a time as the clouds being in a fit position to reflect the beams which the Moon then gives to the place where you are, you shall see a perfect Rainbow in the night; but this does not happen at all times, though there be clouds for the beams to rest on, but only such as are in an angle where these beams reflect and meet in a just point. Divers new constellations we found to the Southward, which in our Horizon are never seen, and amongst them one which we call the *Cruseros*, which is made up of four Stars, which stand almost square, or rather like the claws of a birds foot, and the Seamen told us, that two of them point at the South pole, as the Painters of the *Charles Wain* do to the North Star; but the South pole cannot be seen by us that come from the Northern parts, till we be under the Line, and then we see both North and South, as we do the Sun in morning and evening, at six and six. And thus much for pleasure.

Now for business it was only this, to inform my self, the best I could, of the accompt the Master and his Mates kept of the Ships way, both for Compass, Card, and Log-line, together with the observations at Noon, by that excellent and useful instrument the back-staff, by which we know to a mile the Latitude we are in; and if we had an instrument to find out the Longitude, as perfectly, every man might guide a Ship, that could but keep an account.

To the knowledge of this great secret of the Ships course, divers Gentlemen of our Company applyed themselves very diligently, for the Master was not forward to communicate his skill to all that were of his Mese. And to such a proficiency we were grown, as to lay a wager with the Boatswain, a very good Seaman, upon the first sight of the Island of *Barbadoes*: he would lay we should not see it till the afternoon, or late in the evening; we, that we should make it before noon; whether it were chance, or our skilfulness, I know not, but we won the wager, which was a couple of very fat Hens, which we caused to be dress'd, and eat them in sight of the Island, with a double joy; first, that we had won the wager, next, that we were grown so near our wished Harbour.

Being now come in sight of this happy Island, the nearer we came, the more beautiful it appeared to our eyes, for that being in it self extreamly beautiful, was best discern'd and best judged of, when our eyes became full Masters of the object; there we saw the high large and lofty trees, with their spreading branches and flourishing tops, seem'd to be beholding to the earth and roots that gave them such plenty of sap for their nourishment, as to grow to that perfection of beauty and largeness, whilst they in gratitude return their cool shade to secure and shelter them from the Suns heat, vvhich vvithout it vvould scorch and dry avvay; so that bounty and goodness in the one, and gratefulness in the other, serve to make up this beauty, vvhich othervvise vvould lye empty and vvast; and truly these Vegetatives may teach both the sensible and reasonable creatures, vvhat it is that makes up vvealth, beauty, and all harmony in that Leviathan, a vvell govern'd Common-vvealth, vvhere the Mighty men and Rulers of the earth by their prudent and careful protection, secure them from harms, vv whilst they retribute their



their pains, and faithful obedience, to serve them in all just Commands. And both these, interchangeably and mutually in love, which is the Cord that binds up all in perfect Harmony. And where these are wanting, the roots dry, and leaves fall away, and a general decay, and devastation ensues. Witness the woeful experience of these sad times we live in.

Being now come to the distance of two or three leagues, my first observation was, the form of the Island in general, which is highest in the middle; by which commodity of situation, the Inhabitants within, have these advantages; a free prospect to Sea, and a reception of pure refreshing air, and breezes that come from thence: the plantations overlooking one another so, as the most inland parts, are not bar'd nor restrained the liberties of their view to sea, by those that dwell between them and it. For as we past along near the shoar, the Plantations appear'd to us one above another: like several stories in stately buildings, which afforded us a large proportion of delight. So that we begg'd of the Master, to take down those of his sails, that gave the ship the greatest motion, that we might not be depriv'd on a sudden, of a sight we all were so much pleased with. But our Cattle and Horses (who were under hatches; and therefore no partners of this object,) having devoured all their fodder, and were now ready to come to that necessity, as the next thing to be thought on, was to plain deal boards, and feed them with the shavings; Which deadly hunger, caused such lowing and bellowing of the poor Cattle, as their cry stopped the Masters ears, so as the smoothest, and most persuasive language, we could use: could not force a passage, but with all the haste he could, put into *Carlisle Bay*; which is the best in the Island, where we found riding at Anchor, 22 good ships, with boats plying to and fro, with Sails and Oars, which carried commodities from place to place: so quick stirring, and numerous, as I have seen it below the bridge at *London*.

Yet notwithstanding all this appearance of trade, the Inhabitants of the Islands, and shipping too, were so grievously visited with the plague, (or as killing a disease,) that before a month was expired, after our arrival, the living were hardly able to bury the dead. Whether it were brought thither in shipping: (for in long voyages, diseases grow at Sea, and take away many passengers, and those diseases prove contagious,) or by the distempers of the people of the Island: who by the ill dyet they keep, and drinking strong waters, bring diseases upon themselves, was not certainly known. But I have this reason to believe the latter: because for one woman that dyed, there were ten men; and the men were the greater deboytes.

In this sad time, we arriv'd in this Island; and it was a doubt whether this disease, or famine threatned most; There being a general scarcity of Victuals throughout the whole Island.

Our intention at first, was not to stay long there, but onely to sell our Goods, Cattle, and Horses; and so away to *Antigua*; where we intended to plant: but the ships being (for the most part) infected with this disease, and our selves being unprovided of hands for a new Plantation (by reason of the miscarrying of a ship, which set out before us from *Plimouth*, a month before, with men victuals, and all utensils fitted for a Plantation, we were compelled to stay longer in the



Island than we intended. Besides, the ship we came in, was consigned to another part in *Africa*, called *Cutchem*, to trade for *Negroes*.

But during the time of our stay there, we made enquires of some small Plantation to rest us on, till the times became better, and fitter for our remove; with intent to make use of those few hands we had, to settle that, till we had supplies, and new directions from *England*.

And so upon discourse with some of the most knowing men of the Island, we found that it was far better, for a man that had money, goods, or Credit, to purchase a Plantation there ready furnish'd, and stockt with Servants, Slaves, Horses, Cattle, Assinigos, Camels, &c. with a Sugar work, and an Ingenio: than to begin upon a place, where land is to be had for nothing, but a trivial Rent, and to indure all hardships, and a tedious expectation, of what profit or pleasure may arise, in many years patience: and that, not to be expected, without large and frequent supplies from *England*; and yet fare, and labour hard. This knowledge, was a spur to set on Colonel *Modiford*, who had both goods and credit, to make enquiry for such a purchase, which in very few dayes he lighted on; making a visit to the Governour Mr. *Phillip Bell*, met there with Major *William Hilliard*, an eminent Planter of the Island, and a Councillor, who had been long there, and was now desirous to suck in some of the sweet air of *England*: And glad to find a man likely to perform with him, took him home to his house, and began to treat with him, for half the Plantation upon which he lived; which had in it 500 Acres of Land, with a fair dwelling house, an Ingenio plac'd in a room of 400 foot square; a boyling house, filling room, Cisterns, and Still-house; with a Carding house, of 100 foot long, and 40 foot broad; with stables, Smiths forge, and rooms to lay provisions, of Corn, and Bonavist; Houses for *Negroes* and *Indian* slaves, with 96 *Negroes*, and three *Indian* women, with their Children; 28 Christians, 45 Cattle for work, 8 Milch Cows, a dozen Horses and Mares, 16 Assinigos.

After a Months treaty, the bargain was concluded, and Colonel *Modiford* was to pay for the Moity of this Plantation, 7000 *l.* to be payed, 1000 *l.* in hand, the rest 2000 *l.* a time, at six and six months, and Colonel *Modiford* to receive the profit of half the Plantation as it rose, keeping the account together, both of the expence and profit.

In this Plantation of 500 acres of land, there was imployed for sugar somewhat more than 200 acres; above 80 acres for pasture, 120 for wood, 30 for Tobacco, 5 for Ginger, as many for Cotton wool, and 70 acres for provisions; viz. Corn, Potatoes, Plantines, Cassavie, and Bonavist; some few acres of which for fruit; viz. Pines, Plantines, Milions, Bonanoes, Gnauers, Water Milions, Oranges, Limon Limes, &c. most of these onely for the table.

Upon this Plantation I lived with these two partners a while, But with Colonel *Modiford* three years; for the other went for *England*, and left Colonel *Modiford* to manage the imployment alone; and I to give what assistance I could for the benefit of both: which I did, partly at their requests, and partly at the instance of Mr. *Thomas Kendal*, who reposed much confidence in me, in case Colonel *Modiford* should miscarry in the Voyage.



I only speak thus much, that you may perceive, I had time enough to improve my self, in the knowledge of the management of a Plantation of this bulk; and therefore, you may give the more credit in what I am to say, concerning the profit and value of this Plantation, which I intend as a Scale, for those that go upon the like; or to vary it to greater or less proportions, at their pleasure. And indeed, I wanted no nutridge, in the learning this mystrie, for, to do him right, I hold Collonel *Modiford* as able, to undertake and perform such a charge, as any I know. And therefore I might (according to my ability) be able to say something, which I will, as briefly as I can, deliver to you, in such plain language as I have.

But before I come to say any thing of the Island, as it was when I arrived there, I will beg leave, to deliver you a word or two, what hath been told me by the most ancient Planters, that we found there, and what they had by tradition from their Predecessors. For, few or none of them that first set foot there, were now living.

About the year                      a Ship of Sir *William Curteens*, returning from *Fernambock* in *Brazil*, being driven by foul weather upon this coast, chanc'd to fall upon this Island, which is not far out of the way, being the most windwardly Island of all the *Caribbiés*, (*Tobago* only excepted;) and Anchoring before it, stay'd some time, to inform themselves of the nature of the place; which they found by tryals in several parts, to be so overgrown with Wood, as there could be found no Champions, or *Savannas* for men to dwell in; nor found they any beasts to inhabit there, only Hogs, and those in abundance: the *Portugals* having long before, put some ashore for breed, in case they should at any time be driven by foul weather, to be cast upon the Island, they might there find fresh meat, to serve them upon such an extremity: And the fruits and roots that grew there, afforded them so great plenty of food, as they multiply'd abundantly. So that the Natives of the leeward Islands, that were at the distance of sight, coming thither in their *Cannoes*, and *Periagos*, and finding such Game to hunt, as these hogs, and the flesh so sweet and excellent in taste, they came often thither a hunting, and stay'd sometimes a month together, and so returned again at pleasure, leaving behind them certain tokens of their being there, which were, Pots, of several sizes, in which they boyled their meat, made of clay, so finely tempered, and turned with such art, as I have not seen any like them, for fineness of mettle, and curiosity of turning, in *England*. This information I received from the Planters in *Barbadoes*. But being here a Prisoner, in the *Upper Bench* Prison, my chance was to meet with an ancient Captain, and one of those that first landed on the Island; and had the managing of a good part of the Island, under *William* late Earl of *Pembroke*, before my Lord of *Carlisle* begg'd it of King *James*. This Captain *Canon* (for so was his name) inform'd me for certain, that this was a gross mistake in the Planters, and that no *Indians* ever came there: But those Pots were brought by the *Negroes*, which they fetcht from *Angola*, and some other parts of *Africa*; and that he had seen them make of them at *Angola*, with the greatest art that may be. Though I am willing to believe this Captain, who delivered upon his knowledge, that the *Negroes* brought some Pots thither, and very finely and artificially made; yet, it does not hinder any man from believing,



that the *Indians* brought some too, and who knows, which were the most exactly made. For, 'tis certain, that from some part of the Island, you may see (in a clear day) *St. Vincent's* perfectly : And if we can see them, why may not they see us; and they will certainly venture to any place they see, so far as they know they can reach before night, setting out very early in the morning. But I leave you to credit which of these you please, either, or both.

But I have a great inclination to believe, the *Indians* have been there, for this reason, that the Island of *St. Vincent's*, lying in the same Climate with this of *Barbadoes*, the Clay may be of the same nature and quality; and they, having the skill to bring their Clay to so fine a temper, as to burn and not break, may shew us the way, to temper ours of the *Barbadoes* so, as we may make Bricks to burn, without chopping or cracking; which those of *Angola*, being far off, and it may be, their Clay of different temper, cannot help us in. And it is no hard matter, to procure an *Indian* or two, to come from that Island, and give us direction, which would be of infinite use and advantage, to our buildings in *Barbadoes*. But this digression must not lead me out of the way of my business.

This discovery being made, and advice given to their friends in *England*, other Ships were sent, with men, provisions, and working tools, to cut down the Woods, and clear the ground, so as they might plant provisions to keep them alive, which, till then, they found but straglingly amongst the Woods. But having clear'd some part of it, they planted *Potatoes*, *Plantines*, and *Maies*, with some other fruits; which, with the Hogs-flesh they found, serv'd only to keep life and soul together. And their supplies from *England* coming so slow, and so uncertainly, they were often driven to great extremities: And the Tobacco that grew there, so earthy and worthless, as it could give them little or no return from *England*, or elsewhere; so that for a while they lingred on in a lamentable condition. For, the Woods were so thick, and most of the Trees so large and massie, as they were not to be faln with so few hands; and when they were lay'd along, the branches were so thick and boysterous, as required more help, and those strong and active men, to lop and remove them off the ground. At the time we came first there, we found both *Potatoes*, *Maies*, and *Bonavists*, planted between the boughs, the Trees lying along upon the ground; so far short was the ground then of being clear'd. Yet, we found *Indico* planted, and so well ordered, as it sold in *London* at very good rates; and their Cotton wool, and Fustick wood, prov'd very good and staple commodities. So that having these four sorts of goods to traffick with, some ships were invited (in hope of gain by that trade) to come and visit them, bringing for exchange, such commodities as they wanted, working Tools, Iron, Steel, Cloaths, Shirts, and Drawers, Hose and Shooes, Hats, and more Hands. So that beginning to taste the sweet of this Trade, they set themselves hard to work, and lived in much better condition.

But when the Canes had been planted three or four years, they found that to be the main Plant, to improve the value of the whole Island: And so, bent all their endeavours to advance their knowledge in the planting, and making Sugar: Which knowledge, though they studied hard, was long a learning. But I will forbear to say any thing of



of that, till I bring in the Plants; where you shall find not only the colour, shape, and quality of this Plant, but the worth and value of it, together the whole process of the great work of Sugar making, which is the thing I mainly aim at: But, in my way to that, I will give you a sleight description or view, of the Island in general: and first, of the Situation.

It were a crime, not to believe, but that you are well vers'd in the knowledge of all parts of the known habitable world; and I shall seem impertinent, if I go about to inform you of the situation of this Island. But, because there have been some disputes between Seamen, whether it lye in bare 13 Degrees, or in 13 Degrees and 30 Minutes, I shall easily be led by the most voices, of the most able Seamen, to give for granted, that *Carlisle Bay*, which is the Harbour where most of them put in, is 13 Degrees and 30 Minutes from the Line, to the Northern Latitude.

*The Situation.*

This Bay is, without exception, the best in the Island, and is somewhat more than a league over; and from the points of Land to the bottom of the Bay, is twice as much.

Upon the most inward part of the Bay, stands the Town, which is about the bigness of *Hounslow*, and is called the *Bridge*; for that a long Bridge was made at first over a little nook of the Sea, which was rather a Bog than Sea.

A Town ill situate; for if they had considered health, as they did conveniency, they would never have set it there; or, if they had any intention at first, to have built a Town there, they could not have been so improvident, as not to foresee the main inconveniences that must ensue, by making choice of so unhealthy a place to live in. But, one house being set up, another was erected, and so a third, and a fourth, till at last it came to take the name of a Town; Divers Store-houses being there built, to stow their goods in, for their convenience, being near the Harbour. But the main oversight was, to build their Town upon so unwholsome a place. For, the ground being somewhat lower within the Land, than the Sea-banks are, the spring Tides flow over, and there remains, making a great part of that flat, a kind of Bog or Morass, which vents out so loathsome a savour, as cannot but breed ill blood, and is (no doubt) the occasion of much sickness to those that live there.

At the time of our arrival, and a month or two after, the sickness reign'd so extreemly, as the living could hardly bury the dead; and for that this place was near to them, they threw the dead carcases into the bog, which infected so the water, as divers that drunk of it were absolutely poysoned, and dyed in few hours after; but others, taking warning by their harms, forbear to taste any more of it.

The ground on either side the Bay, (but chiefly that to the Eastward) is much firmer, and lies higher; and, I believe, they will in time, remove the Town upon that ground, for their habitations, though they suffer the Store-houses to remain where they are, for their convenience. But the other situation, may be made with some charge as convenient as that, and abundantly more healthful.

Three Bayes there are more of note in this Island; one, to the Eastward of this, which they call *Austin's Bay*, not in commemoration of any Saint, but of a wild mad drunken fellow, whose lewd and extravagant



travagant carriage, made him infamous in the Island; and his Plantation standing near this Bay, it was called by his name. The other two are to the West of *Carlisle Bay*; and the first is called *Muckfields Bay*, the other *Spikes Bay*; but neither of these three are environ'd with Land, as *Carlisle Bay* is: but being to the Leeward of the Island, and good Anchorage, they seldom are in danger; unless in the time of *Turnado*, when the wind turns about to the South; and then, if they be not well moor'd, they are subject to fall foul on one another, and sometimes driven aground. For, the Leeward part of the Island being rather shelvy than rocky, they seldom or never are cast away.

*The Extent.*

The length and breadth of this Island, I must deliver you only upon trust; for, I could not go my self about it, being full of other business; but I had some speech with the antientest, and most knowing Surveyer there, one Captain *Swan*, who told me, that he once took an exact plot of the whole Island, but it was commanded out of his hands by the then Governour, Sir *Henry Hunk*, who carried it into *England*; since which time, neither himself, nor any other, to his knowledge, had taken any; nor did he believe, there was any extant. I desired him yet that he would rub up his memory, and take a little pains in the survey of his Papers, to try what could be found out there, that might give me some light in the extent of the Island, which he promised to do; and within a while after, told me, that he had found by some Papers, that lay scattered in his Study, the length of it; but for the breadth, it was very uncertain, by reason of the nooks and corners that reach'd out into the Sea, so that it must of necessity be broad in some places, and narrow in others. I desired then to know, how many miles the broadest, and how few the narrowest parts might be. He told me, that he guess'd the broadest place could not be above seventeen miles, nor the narrowest under twelve; and that the length, he was assured, was twenty eight miles. Out of these uncertain grounds, it was a hard matter to conclude upon any certainties; and therefore the evenest way I can go, is, upon a *Medium*, between twelve and seventeen; and, I will be as modest as I can in my computation; and take but 14. which is less than the *Medium*, and multiply 14. which is supposed to be the breadth, 28. which is assured to be the length, and they make 292 square miles in the Island. Beyond this, my enquiries could not reach, and therefore was compell'd to make my estimate upon this bare Supposition. But, for the form of the *Superficies* of the Island, I am utterly ignorant; and for the Upright, I have given it you in my first view of the Island, that it rises highest in the middle.

*The Length of dayes.*

When the Sun is in the *Æquinoctial*, or within 10 Degrees of either side, we find little change in the dayes length; for at six and six the Sun rises and sets: but when he is near the Tropick of *Capricorn*, and is 37 Degrees from us, we find a difference; for then, the day is somewhat shorter, and we perceive that shortning, to begin about the end of *October*; the *Crepusculum* being then not much longer than at other times, which is not half the length, as 'tis with us in *England*.

At the time of new *Atoon*, we find both her Corners equally high, when the Sun is near us; but when it is at the distance of 37 Degrees to the Southward, we find some difference; for then it hangs not so equal, but one end is higher than the other, by reason of the position we are in.



Eight months of the year, the weather is very hot, yet not so scalding, but that servants, both Christians, and slaves, labour and travel ten hours in a day.

Tempera-  
ture of the  
air.

As the Sun rises, there arises with him cool breezes of wind, and the higher and hotter the Sun shines, the stronger and cooler the breezes are, and blow alwayes from the Nore East, and by East, except in the time of the *Turnado*: And then it sometimes chops about into the South, for an hour or two, and then returns again to the same point where it was. The other four months it is not so hot, but is near the temper of the air in *England*, in the middle of *May*, and though in the hot seasons we sweat much, yet we do not find that faintness, that we find here, in the end of *July*, or beginning of *August*. With this great heat, there is such a moisture, as must of necessity cause the air to be very unwholsome.

We are seldom dry or thirsty, unless we overheat our bodies with extraordinary labour, or drinking strong drinks; as of our *English* spirits, which we carry over, of *French* Brandy, or the drink of the Island, which is made of the skimmings of the Coppers, that boyl the Sugar, which they call kill-Devil. And though some of these be needful if they be used with temper; yet the immoderate use of them, over-heats the body, which causes Costiveness, and Torsions in the bowels; which is a disease very frequent there; and hardly cur'd, and of which many have dyed, but certainly strong drinks are very requisite, where so much heat is; for the spirits being exhausted with much sweating, the inner parts are left cold and faint, and shall need comforting, and reviving. Besides, our bodies having been used to colder Climates, find a debility, and a great failing in the vigour, and sprightliness we have in colder Climates; our blood too, is thinner and paler than in our own Countreys. Nor is the meat so well relish'd as in *England*; but flat and insipid, the hogs flesh onely excepted, which is indeed the best of that kind that I think is in the world.

Our Horses and Cattle seldom drink, and when they do, it is in very small quantities; except such as have their bodies over heated with working.

This moisture of the air, causes all our Knives, Etweese, Keys, Needles, Swords, and Ammunition, to rust; and that in an instant for take your knife to the grindstone, and grind away all the rust; which done, wipe it dry, and put it up into your sheath, and so into your pocket and in a very little time, draw it out; and you shall find it beginning to rust all over; which in more time, will eat deep into the steel, and spoil the blade. Our locks too, that are not often made use of, will rust in the wards, and so become useless, and Clocks, and Watches will seldom or never go true; and all this occasion'd by the moistness of the Air. And this we found at sea; for before we came near this Island, we perceiv'd a kind of weather, which is neither rain nor mist, and continued with us sometimes four or five dayes together, which the Seamen call a Heysey weather, and rises to such a height, as though the Sun shine out bright, yet we cannot see his body, till nine a clock in the morning, nor after three in the afternoon. And we see the sky over our heads clear: a close and very unhealthful weather, and no pleasure at all in it.



How water-  
red.

This great heat and moisture together, is certainly the occasion that the trees and plants grow to such vast height, and largeness as they are.

There is nothing in this Island so much wanting, as Springs and Rivers of water; there being but very few, and those very small and inconsiderable. I know but only one River, and that may rather be term'd a Lake, than a River; The Springs that run into it, are never able to fill it, they are so small; out fall to Sea it has none; but at spring tides, the Sea comes in and fills it; and at Nepe tides, it cannot run out again, the Sea banks being higher than it. But some of it issues out through the Sands, and leaves behind it a mixt water, of fresh and salt: at the time the tide comes in, it brings with it some fishes, which are content to remain there; being better pleased to live in this mixt water, than the Salt. Colonel *Humphrey Walrond*, who is owner of the land of both sides, and therefore of it; has told me, that he has taken fishes there, as big as Salmons, which have been overgrown with fat, as you have seen Porpisces; but extreemly sweet and firm.

But it has not been often, that such fish, or any other, have been taken in that place, by reason the whole Lake is filled with trees and roots.

So that no Net can be drawn, nor any Hook laid; for they will wind the lines about the roots, and so get away; or the lines break in pulling up, being fastned to the roots.

This River, or Lake, reaches not within the Land above twelve score yards, or a flight shot at most; and there is no part of it so broad, but you may cast a Coyte over it.

The spring tides there, seldom rise above four or five foot upright: there come from the sea into these small bibling rivolets, little Lobsters, but wanting the great claws afore, which are the sweetest and fullest of fish, that I have seen; *Chichester* Lobsters are not to be compared to them.

But the water which the people of this Island most relye upon, is rain water; which they keep in ponds, that have descents of ground to them, so that what falls on other ground, may run thither. And the place in which the Pond is set, must be low, and clay in the bottom: or if it be not naturally of Clay, it must be made so. For if it find any Leak to the rocky part, it gets between those clifts, and sinks in an instant. About the end of *December*, these ponds are fill'd; and with the help it hath by the weekly showrs that fall, they continue so, yet sometimes they feel a want. This pond water, they use upon all occasions, and to all purposes; to boyl their meat, to make their drink, to wash their linnen, for it will bear soap. But one thing seem'd to me a little loathsome, and that was the *Negroes* washing themselves in the Ponds, in hot weather; whose bodies have none of the sweetest savours. But the Planters are pleased to say, that the Sun with his virtual heat, draws up all noisome vapours, and so the waters become rarified, and pure again. But it was a great satisfaction to me, that a little Rivulet was near us, from whence we fercht daily, as much as served us, both for meat, and drink.

In these ponds, I have never seen any small fish, fry, or any thing that lives or moves in it, except some flies that fall into it; but the water



ter is clear and well tasted. And because their Cattle shall not be in danger of miring or drowning, the best Husbands rail in a part of the Pond, where it is of a competent depth, for the water to stand, and pave that in the bottom with stone; and so the Cattle neither raise the mud, nor sink in with their feet; and so the water comes clear to them.

Water they save likewise from their houses, by gutters at the eaves, which carry it down to cisterns. And the water which is kept there, being within the limits of their houses, many of which are built in manner of Fortifications, and have Lines, Bulwarks, and Bastions to defend themselves, in case there should be any uproar or commotion in the Island, either by the Christian servants, or Negro slaves; serves them for drink whilst they are besieged; as also, to throw down upon the naked bodies of the Negroes, scalding hot; which is as good a defence against their underminings, as any other weapons.

If any tumult or disorder be in the Island, the next neighbour to it, discharges a Musquet, which gives the Alarm to the whole Island; for, upon the report of that, the next shoots, and so the next, and next, till it go through the Island: Upon which warning, they make ready.

Bread, which is accounted the staff, or main supporter of mans life, has not here that full taste it has in *England*; but yet they account it nourishing and strengthening. It is made of the root of a small tree or shrub, which they call *Cassavie*; the manner of his growth I will let alone, till I come to speak of Trees and Plants in general.

*Meat and  
Drink for  
supportation  
of life.*

His root only, which we are now to consider, (because our bread is made of it) is large and round, like the body of a small Still or retort; and as we gather it, we cut sticks that grow nearest to it, of the same tree, which we put into the ground, and they grow. And as we gather, we plant. This root, before it come to be eaten, suffers a strange conversion; for, being an absolute poyson when 'tis gathered, by good ordering, comes to be wholsom and nourishing; and the manner of doing it, is this: They wash the outside of the root clean, and lean it against a Wheel, whose sole is about a foot broad, and covered with Latin, made rough like a large Grater. The Wheel to be turned about with a foot, as a Cutler turns his Wheel. And as it grates the root, it falls down in a large Trough, which is the receiver appointed for that purpose. This root thus grated, is as rank poyson, as can be made by the art of an Apothecary, of the most venomous simples he can put together: but being put into a strong piece of double Canvas, or Sackcloth, and press'd hard, that all the juice be squeezed out, and then opened upon a cloath, and dryed in the Sun, 'tis ready to make bread. And thus 'tis done.

They have a piece of Iron, which I guess is cast round, the diameter of which, is about twenty inches, a little hollowed in the middle, not unlike the mould that the Spectacle-makers grind their glasses on, but not so much concave as that; about half an inch thick at the brim or verge, but thicker towards the middle, with three feet like a pot, about six inches high, that fire may be underneath. To such a temper they heat this Pone, (as they call it) as to bake, but not burn. When 'tis made thus hot, the *Indians*, whom we trust to make it, because they are best acquainted with it, cast the meal upon the Pone, the whole breadth of it, and put it down with their hands,



and it will presently stick together : And when they think that side almost enough, with a thing like a Battle-dore, they turn the other ; and so turn and re-turn it so often, till it be enough, which is presently done. So they lay this Cake upon a flat board, and make another, and so another, till they have made enough for the whole Family. This bread they made, when we came first there, as thick as a pancake ; but after that, they grew to a higher degree of curiosity, and made it as thin as a wafer, and yet purely white and crisp, as a new made wafer. Salt they never use in it, which I wonder at ; for the bread being tasteless of it self, they should give it some little seasoning. There is no way it eats so well, as in milk, and there it tastes like Almonds. They offer to make Pye-crust, but very few attain to the skil of that ; for, as you work it up with your hand, or roll it out with a roller, it will alwayes crackle and chop, so that it will not be raised to hold any liquor, neither with, nor without, butter or eggs.

But after many tryals, and as often failings, at last, I learnt the secret of an *Indian* woman, who shew'd me the right way of it, and that was, by searling it very fine, (and it will fall out as fine, as the finest wheat-flower in *England*) if not finer. Yet, this is not all the secret, for all this will not cure the cracking. But this is the main skill of the business : Set water on the fire in a skillet, and put to it as much of this fine flower, as will temper it to the thickness of starch or pap ; and let it boyl a little, keeping it stirring with a slice ; and mix this with the masse of flower you mean to make into pye-crust, which being very well mingled, and wrought together, you may add what cost you will of butter and eggs, and it will rise and stand near as well as our past in *England*.

But those that have not Cows, and cannot make butter upon the place, but must make use of such as is brought from *England* or *Holland*, were better leave it out, and be content to eat their pye-crust dry. Yet I make a main difference, between butter that is brought from either of those places, in respect of the times it is brought. For, if a ship set out from *England* in *November*, and that ship arrive at the *Barbadoes* at the middle, or near the end of *December*, when the Sun is at the farthest distance, the butter may come thither in very good condition ; and being set in cool places, may retain the taste for a while. But, if the ship set out in Spring or Summer, that brings this butter, it is not then to be endured, it is so restie and loathsome. Nor can Cheese be brought from thence without spoyl, at that time of the year, except you put it in oyl. Neither are Candles to be brought, for the whole barrel will stick together in one lump, and stink so profoundly, as neither Rats nor Mice will come near them, much less eat of them. For which reason, the Planters, who are much troubled with this annoyance, as also, for that these candles cannot be taken out of the barrel whole, nor will stand in the candlestick without drooping, and hanging down ; they burn for the most part wax lights, which they make themselves, of wax they fetch from *Africa*, and have it at a reasonable rate, there being no Bees in the *Barbadoes*.

But I am too apt to fly out in extravagant digressions ; for, the thing I went to speak of, was bread only, and the several kinds of it ; and having said as much of the bread of *Cassavie* as I know, I will give you one word of another kind of bread they make, which is a  
mixt



mixt sort of bread, and is made of the flower of *Mayer* and *Cassavie* mixt together; for the *Mayer* it self will make no bread, it is so extream heavy and lumpish: But these two being mixt, they make it into large Cakes, two inches thick; and that, in my opinion, tastes the likest to *English* bread of any.

But the *Negroes* use the *Mayer* another way, which is, toasting the ears of it at the fire, and so eating it warm off the ear. And we have a way, to feed our Christian servants with this *Mayer*, which is, by pounding it in a large Morter, and boyling it in water, to the thickness of Frumenty; and so put in a Tray such a quantity, as will serve a mess of seven or eight people; give it them cold, and scarce afford them salt with it. This we call *Lob-lollie*. But the *Negroes*, when they come to be fed with this, are much discontented, and cry out, *O! O! no more Lob-li b.*

The third sort of bread we use, is only Potatoes, which are chosen out of the dryest and largest they can choose: And at the time we first came, there was little else used, at many good Planters Tables in the Island. And these are all the sorts of bread that I know growing upon the place.

The next thing that comes in order, is Drink, which being made of several materials, afford more variety in the description. The first, and that which is most used in the Island, is *Mobbie*, a drink made of Potatoes, and thus done. Put the Potatoes into a tub of water, and, with a broom, stir them up and down, till they are washt clean; then take them out, and put them into a large iron or brass pot, such as you boyl beef in, in *England*; and put to them as much water, as will only cover a quarter part of them; and cover the top of the pot with a piece of thick canvas doubled, or such cloth as sacks are made with, covering it close, that the steam go not out. Then make a little fire underneath, so much only as will cause these roots to stew; and when they are soft, take them out, and with your hands, squeeze, break, and mash them very small, in fair water; letting them stay there, till the water has drawn and suckt out all the spirit of the roots; which will be done in an hour or two. Then put the liquor and roots into a large woollen bag, like a jelly-bag, pointed at the bottom; and let it run through that, into a Jar, and within two hours it will begin to work. Cover it, and let it stand till the next day, and then 'tis fit to be drunk. And as you will have it stronger or smaller, put in greater or lesser quantities of roots; some make it so strong, as to be drunk with small quantities. But the drink it self, being temperately made, does not at all fly up into the head, but is a sprightly thirst-quenching drink. If it be put up in small casks, as Rundlets, or Firkins, it will last four or five dayes good, and drink much more sprightly than out of the Jar. I cannot liken it to any thing so near, as *Rhenish-wine* in the Must; but it is short of it in the strength of the spirit, and fineness of the taste.

Drink of  
Mobbie.

There are two several layers, in which these roots grow; one makes the skins of the Potatoes white, the other red: And where the red roots grow, the *Mobbie*, will be red like *Claret-wine*; the other white.

Though this be the drink most generally used in the Island, yet I cannot commend the wholsomness of it, for, the most part of the



roots have a moist quality in them, and are the cause of Hydropick humours. Mr. Phillip Bell, then the Governour of the Island, told me that when he was Governour of the Ile of *Providence*, that there chanc'd some *Spaniards* to land there, and tasting of this drink, wondred that any of those that continually drink it were alive; so unwholsome and Hydropick he conceived this drink to be.

*Perino.*

Another drink they have which is accounted much wholsomer, though not altogether so pleasant, and that is *Perino*; a drink which the *Indians* make for their own drinking, and is made of the *Cassavy* root, which I told you is a strong poyson; and this they cause their old wives, who have a small remainder of teeth, to chew and spit out into water, (for the better breaking and macerating of the root). This juyce in three or four hours will work, and purge it self of the poysonous quality.

Having shewed you, in the making of Bread, that the moysture being press'd out, which is accounted the poysonous quality that root has, by drying and baking it is made useful and wholsome, and now having the juyce and root both used, and both these put into water, which is moist, I know not which way to reconcile these direct contraries, but this; that the poyson of the old womens breath and teeth having been tainted with many several poxes, (a disease common amongst them, though they have many and the best cures for it,) are such opposites to the poyson of the *Cassavy*, as they bend their forces so vehemently one against another, as they both spend their poysonous qualities in that conflict; and so the reliet of them both, becomes less unwholsome; and the water, which is in it self pure, casts out the remainder of the ill qualities they leave behind: which is manifested by the extraordinary working, which is far beyond that of Beer, Wine, or Sider with us in *Europe*. This drink will keep a month or two, being put into barrels, and tastes the likest to *Englisb* beer of any drink we have there.

*Grippe.*

*Grippe* is a third sort of drink, but few make it well; it was never my chance to taste it, which made me the less curious to enquire after it.

*Punch.*

*Punch* is a fourth sort, and of that I have drunk; it is made of water and sugar put together, which in ten dayes standing will be very strong, and fit for labourers.

*Plum-drink.*

A fifth, is made of wild Plumbs, which grow here in great abundance, upon very large trees, which being press'd, and strayned, give a very sharp, and poynant flaver; but there is not much of it made, because of the trouble of making it, and they are not there very indulgent to their palats.

*Plantine-drink.*

But the drink of the *Plantine*, is far beyond all these; gathering them full ripe, and in the height of their sweetness, we pill off the skin, and mash them in water well boyl'd; and after we have let them stay there a night. we strain it, and bottle it up, and in a week drink it; and it is very strong and pleasant drink, but it is to be drunk but sparingly, for it is much stronger than Sack, and is apt to mount up into the head.

The seventh sort of drink is that we make of the skimming of sugar, which is infinitely strong, but not very pleasant in taste; it is common, and therefore the less esteem'd; the value of it is half a Crown



a gallon, the people drink much of it, indeed too much; for it often layes them asleep on the ground, and that is accounted a very unwholsome lodging.

The eighth sort of drink is Beveridge, made of spring water, white sugar, and juyce of Oranges, and this is not onely pleasant but wholsome.

*Beveridge.*

The last and best sort of drink that this Island or the world affords, is the incomparable wine of Pines; And is certainly the Nectar which the Gods drunk; for on earth there is none like it; and that is made of the pure juyce of the fruit it self, without commixture of water, or any other creature, having in it self, a natural compound of all tastes excellent, that the world can yield. This drink is too pure to keep long; in three or four dayes it will be fine; 'tis made by pressing the fruit and straining the liquor, and it is kept in bottles.

*Wine of Pines.*

Having given you a taste of the Bread and Drink this Island affords, which will serve any mans palate, that is not over curious; I could tell you what we have of both sorts that is brought to us from other parts of the world; as Biskets, both fine and course, Barrels of meal close put up; which comes to us very sweet from *England*, and *Holland*; of which we make Bread, Pye-crust, and Puddings. And for drink, good *English* Beer, *French* and *Spanish* Wines, with others, some from the *Maderas*, some from *Fiall*, one of the Islands of *Afores*; So we cannot justly complain of want, either of bread or drink, and, from *England*, Spirits, some of Anniseeds, some of Mint, some of Wormwood, &c. And from *France*, *Brandy*, which is extreame strong, but accounted very wholsome.

Having given you a just account, as near as my memory will serve of the bread and drink of this Island: The next thing is the several sorts of meat we have there; and because Hogs flesh is the most general meat, and indeed the best the Island affords, I will begin with that, which is (without question) as good, as any can be of that kind: for their feeding being as good, as can grow any where, the flesh must needs be answerable; fruit, the nuts of Locust, Pompions of a rare kind, almost as sweet as Milions, the bodies of the Plantines, and Bonanoes, Sugar-canes, and Mayes, being their daily food.

*Meat of all kinds.*

When we came first upon the Island, I perceiv'd the sties they made to hold them, were trees, with the ends lying cross upon one another, and the inclosure they made, was not large enough to hold the numbers of Hogs were in them, with convenient distance to play and stir themselves for their health, and pleasure; so that they were in a manner pester'd, and choakt up, with their own stink, which is sure the most noysome of any other beast, and by reason of the Suns heat much worse; I have smelt the stink of one of those sties down the wind, near a mile, through all the wood: and the crowding and thrusting them so close together, was certainly the cause of their want of health, which much hindred their growth; So that they were neither so large, nor their flesh so sweet, as when they were wild, and at their own liberty, and choice of feeding.

For I have heard Major *Hilliard* say: that at their first coming there, they found Hogs, that one of them weigh'd (the intrals being taken out, and the head off) 400 weight: And now at the time of



my being there, the most sort of those, that were in ours and our neighbours styes, were hardly so big as the ordinary swine in *England*. So finding this decay in their growth, by stowing them too close together, I advised Collonel *Modiford* to make a larger stye, and to wall it about with stone; which he did, and made it a mile about, so that it was rather a Park than a Stye; and set it on the side of a dry Hill, the greatest part Rock, with a competent Pond of water in the bottom; and plac'd it between his two Plantations, that from either, food might be brought, and cast over to them, with great convenience: And made several divisions in the Park, for the Sows with Pig, with little houses standing shelving, that their foulness by gutters might fall away, and they lye dry; Other divisions for the Barrow-Hogs, and some for Boars.

This good ordering caused them to grow so large and fat, as they wanted very little of their largeness when they were wild. They are the sweetest flesh of that kind, that ever I tasted, and the loveliest to look on in a dish, either boyl'd, roasted, or bak'd: With a little help of art. I will deceive a very good palate, with a shoulder of it for Mutton, or a leg for Veal, taking off the skin, with which they were wont to make minc't Pies, seasoning it with salt, cloves, and mace, and some sweet herbs minc'd. And being bak'd, and taken out of the Oven, opening the lid, put in a dram-cup of *Kill-Devil*; and being stirr'd together, set it on the Table; and that they call'd a *Calvesfoot Pye*; and, till I knew what it vvas made of, I thought it very good meat: When I came first upon the Island, I found the Pork dress'd the plain wayes of boyling, roasting, and sometimes baking: But I gave them some tastes of my Cookery, in hashing, and fricasing this flesh; and they all were much taken with it; and in a week, every one was practising the Art of Cookery. And indeed, no flesh tastes so well in Collops, Hashes, or Fricases, as this. And when I bak'd it, I alwayes laid a Side of a young Goat underneath, and a side of a Shot (which is a young Hog of a quarter old) a top. And this, well seasoned, and well bak'd, is as good meat, as the best Pasty of Fallow-Deer, that ever I tasted.

In the coolest time of the year, I have made an essay to powder it, and hang it up for Bacon: But there is such loss in't, as 'tis very ill Husbandry to practise it; for, it must be cut through in so many places, to let the salt in, as when 'tis to be dress'd, much goes to waste. And therefore I made no more attempts that way. But a little corning with salt, makes this flesh very savoury, either boyled or roasted.

About *Christmas*, we kill a Boar, and of the sides of it, make three or four Collers of Brawn; for then the weather is so cool, as, with some art, it may be kept sweet a week: and to make the souc't drink give it the speedier and quicker seasoning, we make it of *Mobbie*, with store of Salt, Lemons, and Lymes, sliced in it, with some Nutmeg, which gives it an excellent flavor.

Beef, we have very seldome any, that feeds upon the soil of this place, except it be of Gods killing, (as they tearm it); for very few are kill'd there by mens hands; it were too ill Husbandry, for they cost too dear, and they cannot be spared from their work, which they must advance by all the means they can. Such a Planter as Collonel *James Drax* (who lives like a Prince) may kill now and then one; but



but very few in the Island did so when I was there.

The next to Swines-flesh in goodness, are Turkies, large, fat, and full of gravy. Next to them, Pullen or Dunghill-fowl : and last of all, Muscovia-Ducks, which being larded with the fat of this Pork, (being seasoned with pepper and salt) are an excellent bak'd-meat. All these, with their Eggs and Chickens, we eat.

Turtle-Doves they have of two sorts, and both very good meat ; but there is a sort of Pidgeons, which come from the leeward Islands at one time of the year, and it is in *September* ; and stay till *Christmas* be past, and then return again : But very many of them ne'r make returns, to tell news of the good fruit they found there : For, they are so fat, and of such excellent tastes, as many fowlers kill them with guns, upon the trees ; and some of them are so fat, as their weight with the fall, causes them to burst in pieces. They are good roasted, boyl'd, or bak'd, but best cut in halves, and stewed ; to which Cookery, there needs no liquor, for their own gravy will abundantly serve to stew them.

Rabbets we have, but tame ones, and they have but faint tastes, more like a Chicken than a Rabbet.

And though they have divers other Birds, which I will not forget to recount in their due times, and place ; yet, none for food for the Table, which is the business I intend at this present. Other flesh-meat, I do not remember.

Now for fish, though the Island stands as all Islands do, invironed with the Sea, (and therefore is not like to be unfurnish'd of that provision) yet, the Planters are so good husbands, and tend their profits so much, as they will not spare a *Negroes* absence so long, as to go to the *Bridge* and fetch it. And the Fishermen seeing their fish lye upon their hands, and stink (which it will do in less than six hours) forbear to go to Sea to take it ; only so much as they can have present vent for, at the Taverns at the *Bridge* ; and thither the Planters come, when they have a mind to feast themselves with fish, to Mr. *Jobsons*, or *Joan Fullers*, where they have it well dress'd ; for they were both my Pupils. Butter they seldom have, that will beat thick, but in stead of that, we are fain to use vinegar and spice, and much of it fryed in oyle, and eaten hot ; and some marinated, and souc'r in pickle, and eaten cold. Collonel *Humphrey Walrond* has the advantage of all the Planters in the Island ; for, having a Plantation near the Sea, he hath of his own a Sain to catch fish withall, which his own servants and slaves put out to Sea, and, twice or thrice a week, bring home all sorts of such small and great fishes, as are near the shoar ; amongst which, some are very large, and excellently well tasted. For, he being a Gentleman, that had been bred with much freedom, liberty, and plenty, in *England*, could not set his mind so earnestly upon his profit, as to forget his accustomed lawful pleasures, but would have his Table well furnish'd, with all sorts of good meat the Land and Sea afforded ; and as freely bid his friends welcom to it. And I, as the poorest of his friends, in a lingering sickness, and near death, found such a charity with him, as I shall never forget to pay my thanks for, to the last hour of my life ; and I shall account it as a great happiness, (if ever it fall in the compass of my power) to be serviceable to him or his, as any thing that can befall me in the world.



Amongst other fishes that were taken by his Sain, (as the Snappers, red and grey, Cavallos, Macquerels, Mulletts, Cony-fish, with divers others, firm and excellent sweet fish) he took four, that were about a yard long at the least, all at one draught, and, to that length, bigger grown than Salmonds, of the rarest colour that ever I beheld; from the back-finn, which is the middle of the fish, to the end of the tail, the purest grasse-green that ever I saw, and as shining as Satin: but the fins and tail dapled or spotted with as pure a hair-colour, and from the back fin to the head, pure hair colour dapled with green; the scales as big for the most part, as a half-crown piece of silver. This fish is no fish of prey, but lives by what he finds in the bottom of the Sea, as I perceived by what was in his maw. An excellent sweet fish; I dressed them several wayes, and all proved excellent. There is one fish wanting to this Island, whose kindes are very frequent upon most of the *Charibby* and *Lucick* Islands; and that is the green *Turtle*, which is the best food the Sea affords, and the greatest store of them; but I have seen very few of that kind in the *Barbadoes*, and those neither fat nor kindly; and the reason is, there are no shelves nor sands to lay their eggs, or to ayre themselves on: For, these fishes delight to be on the sands, and can remain there twelve hours, all the time the Tyde is out; and then suffer themselves to be carried away by the return of the next Tyde. They take infinite numbers of them, by turning them on their backs with staves, where they lye till they are fetcht away. A large *Turtle* will have in her body half a bushel of eggs, which she layes in the sand, and that being warm, they are hatcht in the heat.

When you are to kill one of these fishes, the manner is, to lay him on his back on a table, and when he sees you come with a knife in your hand to kill him, he vapours out the grievouest sighs, that ever you heard any creature make, and sheds as large tears as a Stag, that has a far greater body; and larger eyes. He has a joynt or crevis, about an inch within the utmost edge of his shell, which goes round about his body, from his head to his tail, on his belly-side; into which joynt or crevis, you put your knife, beginning at the head, and so rip up that side, and then do as much to the other; then lifting up his belly, which we call his *Calipee*, we lay open all his bowels, and taking them out, come next to his heart, which has three distinct points, but all meet above where the fat is; and if you take it out, and lay it in a dish, it will stir and pant ten hours after the fish is dead. Sure, there is no creature on the Earth, nor in the Seas, that enjoys life with so much sweetness and delight, as this poor fish the *Turtle*, nor none more delicate in taste, and more nourishing, than he.

Next to the flesh and fish this Island affords, 'tis fit to consider what *Quelque choses* there are to be found, that may serve to furnish out a Table of such Viands, as are there to be had; which are eggs several wayes, viz. poch'd, and laid upon sippets of bread, soak'd in butter and juice of limes, and sugar, with plumpt currans strewed upon them, and Cloves, Mace, and Cinamon beaten, strewed on that, with a little salt. Eggs boyl'd and roasted, fryed with Collops of the fat of Pork well powdered. Buttered eggs, an Amulet of eggs, with the juice of Limes and Sugar, a Froize, and a Tansey; Custards, as good as any at my Lord Mayors Table; Cheef-cakes, Puffs, second Porrage, which



is cream boyl'd to a height, with yolk of eggs, and season'd with sugar, and spice, Jelly which we make of the flesh of young pigs, calves feet, and a cock, and is excellent good, but must presently be eaten, for it will not last. Cream alone, and some done several wayes, of which there is great variety, having Lemons, Lymes, and Oranges ready at hand; and some wherein we put Plantines, Gnauers and Bonanoes, stew'd, or preserv'd with sugar, and the same fruits also preserv'd and put in dishes by themselves, without Cream; and for a whetstone, to pull on a cup of wine, we have dryed Neats tongues, brought from new and old *England*; and from *Holland*, *Westphalia* Bacon, and Caviare; as also pickl'd Herring, and Macquerel, which we have from new *England*, and from *Virginia* Botargo, of which sort I have eaten the best at Colonel *Draxes* that ever I tasted.

The fruits that this Island affords, I have already named, and therefore it will be needless to name them twice; you may take your choice, whether you will have them set on the Table before or after meat; they use as they do in *Italy*, to eat them before meat.

The victuals brought from forraign parts are these, Beef which we have from *Holland*, from Old and New *England*, *Virginia*, and some from *Russia*; and yet comes to us sweet. Pork from all these places, with the most sorts of salt fish; as Ling, Haberdine, Cod, poor-John, pickled Macquerels, pickled Herrings, all very good. Sturgeon from New *England*, but so ill Cook'd, as 'tis hardly to be eaten; for they want the skil both of boyling and seasoning it; they first over-boyl it, and next over-salt it, and so the fish being over tender by boyling, the salt frets and eats upon it all the way; for when we come to open it, being carried far from the Bridge, and shaken in the carriage: there is scarce a whole piece, but the Sturgeon and pickle all in a mash, & so vehemently salt, as I could never eat any of it, but at Colonel *Wallronds* Plantation it is less broken:

Pickled Turtle, we have from the Leeward Islands, but so uncleanly ordered, as we could hardly find in our hearts to eat it; for they gather the Salt and Sand together, for hast, upon the Island where it is taken up, as; though we wash it never so well, yet the grit cracks in our teeth; it has a taste being salted, almost as ill as puffins, which we have from the isles of *Silly*, but this kind of food, is only for servants; sometimes the *Negroes* get a little, but seldome the one or the other did eat any bone meat, at our first coming thither.

But now at my coming away from thence, it was much better'd, for by the care and good Husbandry of the Planters, there was greater plenty, both of the victuals they were wont to eat, as Potatoes, Bonavist, Loblolly, as also of the bone meat, viz. Pork, salt Fish, and powder'd beef, which came thither by sea, from forraign parts, in so much as the *Negroes* were allowed each man two Macquerels a week, and every woman one; which were given out to them on *Saturday* in the evening, after they had their allowance of Plantines, which was every one a large bunch, or two little ones, to serve them for a weeks provision; and if any cattle dyed by mischance, or by any disease: the servants eat the bodies, and the *Negroes* the skins, head, and intrails which was divided amongst them by the Overseers; or if any horse, than the whole bodies of them were distributed amongst the *Negroes*, and that they thought a high feast, with which never poor souls were more contented; and the drink to the servants with this dyet,



nothing but *Mobbie*, and sometimes a little Beveridge; but the *Negroes* nothing but fair water. And now I think, I have given you a just account of the victuals that feeds the Masters, the Servants, and the Slaves of this Island: and now you see the provision the Island affords, give me leave to shew you vvhhat feasts they can (vvhen they vvill) make for their friends, upon their Plantations, vvhich that I may the better do, I vvill make tvvo bills of fare; the one for an Inland Plantation, the other for a Plantation near the sea, of such meat and such plenty of that, as I have seen and eaten of, at either of those Plantations; And for the Inland Plantation, I vvill make choice of Collonel *James Draxes*, at vvhose Table I have found vvell dress'd, these follovvng meats; for the first Course vvhereof there hath been tvvo messes of meat and both equally good, and this feast is alvvayes vvhen he kills a beef, vvhich he feeds extreamly fat, giving him a dozen acres of Bonavist to go loose in, and due times of vvatering.

First then (because beef being the greatest rarity in the Island, especially such as this is) I vvill begin vvith it, and of that sort there are these dishes at either mess, a Rump boyl'd, a Chine roasted, a large piece of the breast roasted, the Cheeks bak'd, of which is a dish to either mess, the tongue and part of the tripes minc'd for Pyes, season'd with sweet Herbs finely minc'd, Suet, Spice and Carrans; the Legs, Pallets and other ingredients for an *Olio Podrido* to either mess, a dish of Marrow-bones, so here are 14 dishes at the Table and all of Beef; and this he intends as the great *Regalia*, to which he invites his fellow Planters; who having well eaten of it, the dishes are taken away, and another Course brought in, which is a Potato pudding, a dish of Scots Collops of a leg of Pork, as good as any in the world, a fricacy of the same, a dish of boyl'd Chickens, a shoulder of a young Goat dress'd with his Blood and Time, a Kid with a pudding in his belly, a sucking Pig, which is there the fattest, whitest, and sweetest in the world, with the poynant-sauce of the Brains, Salt, Sage, and Nutmeg done with Claret-wine, a Shoulder of Mutton which is there a rare dish, a Pasty of the side of a young Goat, and a side of a fat young Shot upon it, well season'd with Pepper and Salt, and with some Nutmeg, a Loyn of Veal, to which there wants no sauce being so well furnish'd with Oranges, Lemons, and Lymes, three young Turkies in a dish, two Capons, of which sort I have seen some extream large and very fat, two Hens with eggs in a dish, four Ducklings, eight Turtle doves, and three Rabbits; and for cold bak'd meats, two *Muscovia* Ducks larded, and season'd well with Pepper and Salt: and these being taken off the Table, another course is set on, and that is of *Westphalia* or *Spanish* bacon, dried Neats Tongues, Botargo, pickled Oysters, Caviare, Anchovies, Olives, and (intermixt with these) Custards, Creams, some alone, some with preserves of Plantines, Bonano, Gnavers, put in, and those preserv'd alone by themselves, Cheese-cakes, Puffes, which are to be made with *English* flower, and bread; for the Cassavie will not serve for this kind of Cookery; sometimes Tansies, sometimes Froizes, or Amulets, and for fruit, Plantines, Bonanoes, Gnavers, Milions, prickled Pear, Anchove Pear, prickled Apple, Custard Apple, water Milions, and Pines worth all that went before. To this meat you seldom fail of this drink, *Mobbie*, Beveridge, Brandy, Kill-Devil, Drink of the Plantine, Claret-wine, White-wine, and Rhenish-wine, Sherry,



Sherry, Canary, Red sack, wine of Fiall, with all Spirits that come from *England*, and with all this, you shall find as chearful a look, and as hearty a welcome, as any man can give to his best friends. And so much for a Feast of an inland Plantation.

Now for a Plantation near the Sea, which shall be Collonel *Walrond's*, he being the best seated for a Feast, of any I know : I must say this, that though he be wanting in the first Course, which is Beef ; yet, it will be plentifully supplied in the last, which is Fish ; and that the other wants. And though Collonel *Walrond*, have not that infinite store of the provisions Collonel *Drax* abounds in ; yet, he is not wanting in all the kinds he has, unless it be Sheep, Goats, and Beef, and so for all the sorts of meats, that are in my Bill of Fare, in Collonel *Drax* his Feast, you shall find the same in Collonel *Walrond's*, except these three, and these are supplied with all these sorts of fish I shall name, to wit, *Mulletts*, *Macquerels*, *Parrat fish*, *Snappers*, red and grey, *Cavallots*, *Terbuns*, *Crabs*, *Lobsters*, and *Cony fish*, with divers sorts more, for which we have no names. And having these rare kinds of fishes, 'twere a vain superfluity, to make use of all those dishes I have named before, but only such as shall serve to fill up the Table ; and when he has the ordering it, you must expect to have it excellent ; his fancy and contrivance of a Feast, being as far beyond any mans there, as the place where he dwells is better situate, for such a purpose. And his Land touching the Sea, his House being not half a quarter of a mile from it, and not interposed by any unlevel ground, all rarities that are brought to the Island, from any part of the world, are taken up, brought to him, and stowed in his Cellars, in two hours time, and that in the night ; as, Wine, of all kinds, Oyl, Olives, Capers, Sturgeon, Neats tongues, Anchovies, Caviare, Botargo, with all sorts of salted meats, both flesh and fish for his Family ; as, Beef, Pork, *English* Pease, Ling, Haberdine, Cod, Poor John, and Jerkin Beef, which is huffed, and flast through, hung up and dried in the Sun ; no salt at all put to it. And thus ordered in *Hispaniola*, as hot a place as *Barbadoes*, and yet it will keep longer than powdered Beef, and is as dry as Stock-fish, and just such meat for flesh, as that is for fish, and as little nourishment in it ; but it fills the belly, and serves the turn, where no other meat is. Though some of these may be brought to the inland Plantations well conditioned ; yet, the Wines cannot possibly come good ; for the wayes are such, as no Carts can pass ; and to bring up a Butt of Sack, or a Hoghead of any other Wine, upon *Negroes* backs, will very hardly be done in a night, so long a time it requires, to hand it up and down the Gullies ; and if it be carried in the day-time, the Sun will heat and taint it, so as it will lose much of his spirit and pure taste ; and if it be drawn out in bottles at the *Bridge*, the spirits fly away in the drawing, and you shall find a very great difference in the taste and quickness of it. Oyle will endure the carriage better than Wine, but over-much heat will abate something of the purity, and excellent taste it has naturally. And for Olives, 'tis well known, that jogging in the carriage causes them to bruise one another ; and some of them being bruised, will grow rotten, and infect the rest. So that Wine, Oyle, and Olives, cannot possibly be brought to such Plantations, as are eight or ten miles from the *Bridge* ; and from thence, the most part of these commodities are to be fetch'd. So that you may



imagine, what advantage Collonel *Wairand* has, of any inland Plantation, having these materials, which are the main Regalia's in a Feast, and his own contrivance to boot, besides all I have formerly nam'd, concerning raw and preserv'd fruits, with all the other *Quelquechofes*. And thus much I thought good to say for the honour of the Island, which is no more than truth; because I have heard it sleighted by some, that seem'd to know much of it.

Commodi-  
ties Expor-  
ted.

About a hundred sail of Ships yearly visit this Island, and receive, during the time of their stay in the Harbours, for their sustenance, the native Victuals growing in the Island, such as I have already named; besides what they carry away, and what is carried away by Planters of the Isle, that visit other parts of the world. The commodities this Island trades in, are *Indico*, *Cotton-wool*, *Tobacco*, *Sugar*, *Ginger*, and *Fustick-wood*.

Commodi-  
ties Import-  
ed.

The Commodities these Ships bring to this Island, are, *Servants* and *Slaves*, both men and women; *Horses*, *Cattle*, *Assinigoes*, *Camels*, *Ovens* for boyling Sugar as, *Coppers*, *Taches*, *Gondges*, and *Sockets*; all manner of working tooles for Tradesmen, as, *Carpenters*, *Joyners*, *Smiths*, *Masons*, *Mill-wrights*, *Wheel-wrights*, *Tinkers*, *Coopers*, &c. *Iron*, *Steel*, *Lead*, *Brass*, *Pewter*, *Cloth* of all kinds, both *Linnen* and *Woollen*; *Stuffs*, *Hats*, *Hose*, *Shoes*, *Gloves*, *Swords*, *Knives*, *Locks*, *Keys*, &c. *Victuals* of all kinds, that will endure the Sea, in so long a voyage. *Olives*, *Capers*, *Anchovies*, *salted Flesh* and *Fish*, *pickled Macquerels* and *Herrings*, *Wine* of all sorts, and the boon Beer, & *Angleterre*.

What Buil-  
dings we  
found at our  
first coming  
upon the  
Island.

I had it in my thought before I came there, what kind of Buildings would be fit for a Country, that was so much troubled with heat, as I have heard this was; and did expect to find thick walls, high roofs, and deep cellers; but found neither the one nor the other, but clean contrary; timber houses, with low roofs, so low, as for the most part of them, I could hardly stand upright with my hat on, and no cellars at all: besides, another course they took, which was more wonder to me than all that; which was, stopping, or barring out the wind, which should give them the greatest comfort, when they were neer stifled with heat. For, the wind blowing alwayes one way, which was Eastwardly, they should have made all the openings they could to the East, thereby to let in the cool breezes; to refresh them when the heat of the day came. But they, clean contrary, closed up all their houses to the East, and opened all to the West; so that in the afternoons, when the Sun came to the West, those little low roofed rooms were like Stoves, or heated Ovens. And truly, in a very hot day, it might raise a doubt, whether so much heat without, and so much Tobacco and *kill-devil* within, might not set the house a fire; for these three ingredients are strong motives to provoke it, and they were ever there.

But at last I found by them, the reasons of this strange preposterous manner of building, which was grounded upon the weakest and silliest foundation that could be: For they alledged, that at the times of rain, which was very often, the wind drave the rain in at their windows so fast, as the houses within were much annoyed with it; for having no glass to keep it out, they could seldom sit or lye dry; and so being constrained to keep out the air on that side, for fear of letting in the water, would open the West ends of their houses so

vvide



wide, (as was beyond the proportion of windows to repair that want) and so let in the fire; not considering at all; that there was such a thing as shutters for windows, to keep out the rain that hurt them, and let in the wind to refresh them, and do them good at their pleasure. But this was a consideration laid aside by all, or the most part of the meaner sort of Planters. But at last I found the true reason, was their poverty and indigence, which wanted the means to make such conveniences; and so, being compelled by that, had rather suffer painfully, and patiently abide this inconvenience, than sell or part with any of their goods, to prevent so great a mischief: So loath poor people are to part with that, which is their next immediate help, to support them in their great want of sustenance. For, at that lock they often were, and some good Planters too, that far'd very hard, when we came first into the Island. So that hard labour, and want of victuals, had so much depress'd their spirits, as they were come to a declining and yielding condition. Nor can this be called slothfulness or sluggishness in them, as some will have it, but a decay of their spirits, by long and tedious hard labour, sleight feeding, and ill lodging, which is able to wear out and quell the best spirit of the world.

The *Locust* is a tree of such a growth, both for length and bigness, as may serve for beams in a very large room: I have seen many of them, whose straight bodies are above fifty foot high, the diameter of the stem or body, three foot and half. The timber of this tree is a hard close substance, heavy, but firm, and not apt to bend, somewhat hard for tooles to cut; brittle, but lasting. *Mastick*, not altogether so large as he, but of a tougher substance, and not accounted so brittle. The *Bully-tree* wants something of the largeness of these, but in his other qualities goes beyond either; for, he is full out as lasting, and as strong, but not so heavy, nor so hard for tooles to work. The *Redwood* and *prickled yellow wood*, good for posts or beams, and are lighter than the *Locust*; both are accounted very lasting, and good for building. The *Cedar* is, without controul, the best of all; but by reason it works smooth, and looks beautiful, we use it most in Wain-scor, Tables, and Stools. Other timber we have, as the *Iron-wood*, and another sort, which are excellent good to endure wet and dry; and of those we make Shingles, which being such a kind of wood, as will not warp nor rive, are the best coverings for a house that can be, full out as good as Tiles, and lye lighter upon the Rafter.

What materials grow in the Island fit to build with, which may be call'd the Elements of Architecture. And first, for Timber.

We have two sorts of Stone, and either will serve indifferently well in building: The one we find on sides of small Hills, and it lyes as ours do in *England*, in Quarries; but they are very small, rough, and ill shaped, some of them porous; like Honey combs; but being burnt, they make excellent Lime, the whitest and firmest when 'tis dry, that I have seen; and by the help of this, we make the better shift with our ill shap'd stone; for this lime binds it fast together, and keeps it firm to endure the weather. Other Stone we have, which we find in great Rocks, and massie pieces in the ground, but so soft, as with your finger you may bore a hole into it; and this softness gives us the means of cutting it with two-handed Sawes, which being hard, we could not so easily do, and the easiness causes the expedition; for by that, we are more speedily fit it for our walls, taking a just breadth

Stone fit for Building.



of the walls, and cutting it accordingly ; so that we need very little hewing. This stone, as we cut it in the quarry, is no harder than ordinary mortar, but being set out in the weather, by pieces as we cut it, grows indifferently hard, and is able to bear all the weight that lyes on it, and the longer it lyes, the harder it grows. Many essayes we made, whilst I was there, for the making and burning of bricks, but never could attain to the perfection of it ; and the reason was, the overfatness of the clay, which would alwayes crackle and break, when it felt the great heat of the fire in the Clampe ; and by no means could we find the true temper of it, though we made often tryals. There was an ingenious *Jew* upon the Island, whose name was *Solomon*, that undertook to teach the making of it ; yet for all that, when it came to the touch his wisdom failed, and we were deceived in our expectation, I doubt not but there is a way of tempering, to make it far better than ours in *England* ; for the pots which we find in the Island, wherein the *Indians* boyl'd their Pork, were of the same kind of Clay, and they were the best and finest temper'd ware of earth that ever I saw. If we could find the true temper of it, a great advantage might be made to the Island ; for the air being moist, the stones often sweat, and by their moisture rot the timbers they touch, which to prevent we cover the ends of our beams and girders with boards, pitch'd on both sides, but the walls being made of bricks, or but lin'd with brick, would be much the wholesomer ; and besides keep our wainscot from rotting. Hangings we dare not use, for being spoyl'd by Ants, and eaten by the Cockroaches, and Rats, yet some of the Planters that meant to handson their houses, were minded to send for gilt leather, and hang their rooms with that, which they were more than perswaded those vermine would not eat, and in that resolution I left them.

Carpenters, and Masons, were newly come upon the Island, and some of these very great Masters in their Art : and such as could draw a plot, and pursue the design they framed with great diligence, and beautifie the tops of their Doors, Windows, and Chimney-peecees, very prettily ; but not many of those, nor is it needful that there should be many, for though the Planters talk of building houses, and wish them up, yet when they weigh the want of those hands in their sugar work, that must be employed in their building, they fall back, and put on their considering caps. I drew out at least twenty plots when I came first into the Islands which they all lik'd well enough, and yet but two of them us'd, one by Captain *Middleton*, and one by Captain *Standfast*, and those were the two best houses, I left finish'd in the Island when I came away. Cellars I would not make under ground, unless the house be set on the side of a Hill ; for though the air be moist above, yet I found it by experience much moister under ground ; so that no moist thing can be set there, but it will in a very short time grow mouldy, and rotten ; and if for coolness you think to keep any raw flesh, it will much sooner taint there, than being hung up in a garret, where the Sun continually shines upon. Nay the pipe-staves hoops, and heads of barrels, and hogsheds, will grow mouldy and rotten : Pavements and foundations of bricks would much help this with glass windows, to keep out the air.

If I were to build a house for my self in that place, I would have



a third part of my building to be of an East and West line, and the other two thirds to cross that, at the West end: in a North and South line, and this latter to be a story higher than that of the East and West line, so that at four a clock in the afternoon, the higher buildings will begin to shade the other, and so afford more and more shade to my East and West building till night; and not only to the house, but to all the walks that I make on either side that building, and then I would raise my foundation of that part of my house wherein my best rooms were three foot above ground; leaving it hollow underneath for Ventiducts, which I would have come into every room in the house, and by that means you shall feel the cool breeze all the day, and in the evening, when they slacken, a cool shade from my North and South building, both which are great refreshings, in hot Countreys: and according to this Model, I drew many plots, of several sizes and contrivances, but they did not or would not understand them: at last I grew weary of casting stones against the wind, and so gave over.

It were somewhat difficult, to give you an exact account, of the number of persons upon the Island; there being such store of shipping that brings passengers daily to the place, but it has been conjectur'd, by those that are long acquainted, and best seen in the knowledge of the Island, that there are not less than 50 thousand souls, besides *Negroes*; and some of them who began upon small fortunes, are now risen to very great and vast estates.

*The number and nature of the Inhabitants.*

The Island is divided into three sorts of men, *viz.* Masters, Servants, and Slaves. The slaves and their posterity, being subject to their Masters for ever, are kept and preserv'd with greater care than the servants, who are theirs but for five years, according to the law of the Island. So that for the time, the servants have the worser lives, for they are put to very hard labour, ill lodging, and their dyet very sleight. When we came first on the Island, some Planters themselves did not eat bone meat, above twice a week: the rest of the seven dayes, Potatoes, Loblolly, and Bonavist. But the servants no bone meat at all, unless an Oxe dyed: and then they were feasted, as long as that lasted. And till they had planted good store of Plantines, the *Negroes* were fed with this kind of food; but most of it Bonavist, and Loblolly, with some ears of Mayes toasted, which food (especially Loblolly,) gave them much discontent: But when they had Plantines enough to serve them, they were heard no more to complain; for 'tis a food they take great delight in, and their manner of dressing, and eating it, is this: 'tis gathered for them (somewhat before it be ripe, for so they desire to have it,) upon *Saturday*, by the keeper of the Plantine grove; who is an able *Negro*, and knowes well the number of those that are to be fed with this fruit; and as he gathers, layes them all together, till they fetch them away, which is about five a clock in the afternoon, for that day they break off work sooner by an hour: partly for this purpose, and partly for that the fire in the furnaces is to be put out, and the Ingemo and the rooms made clean; besides they are to wash, shave and trim themselves against *Sunday*. But 'tis a lovely sight to see a hundred handsom *Negroes*, men and women, with every one a grasse-green bunch of these fruits



on their heads, every bunch twice as big as their heads, all coming in a train one after another, the black and green so well becoming one another. Having brought this fruit home to their own houses, and pilling off the skin of so much as they will use, they boyl it in water, making it into balls, and so they eat it. One bunch a week is a *Negroe's* allowance. To this, no bread nor drink, but water. Their lodging at night a board, with nothing under, nor any thing a top of them. They are happy people, whom so little contents. Very good servants, if they be not spoyled by the *English*. But more of them hereafter.

As for the usage of the Servants, it is much as the Master is, merciful or cruel; Those that are merciful, treat their Servants well, both in their meat, drink, and lodging, and give them such work, as is not unfit for Christians to do. But if the Masters be cruel, the Servants have very wearisome and miserable lives. Upon the arrival of any ship, that brings servants to the Island, the Planters go aboard; and having bought such of them as they like, send them with a guid to his Plantation; and being come, commands them instantly to make their Cabins, which they not knowing how to do, are to be advised by other of their servants, that are their Seniors; but, if they be churlish, and will not shew them, or if materials be wanting, to make them Cabins, then they are to lye on the ground that night. These Cabins are to be made of sticks, vviths, and Plantine leaves, under some little shade that may keep the rain off; Their suppers being a fevv Potatoes for meat, and vvater or Mobbie for drink. The next day they are rung out with a Bell to work, at six a clock in the morning, with a severe Overseer to command them, till the Bell ring again, which is at eleven a clock; and then they return, and are set to dinner, either with a mess of Lob-lolly, Bonavist, or Potatoes. At one a clock, they are rung out again to the field, there to work till six, and then home again, to a supper of the same. And if it chance to rain, and wet them through, they have no shift, but must lye so all night. If they put off their cloaths, the cold of the night will strike into them; and if they be not strong men, this ill lodging will put them into a sickness; if they complain, they are beaten by the Overseer; if they resist, their time is doubled. I have seen an Overseer beat a Servant with a cane about the head, till the blood has followed, for a fault that is not worth the speaking of; and yet he must have patience, or worse will follow. Truly, I have seen such cruelty there done to Servants, as I did not think one Christian could have done to another. But, as discreeter and better natur'd men have come to rule there, the servants lives have been much bettered; for now, most of the servants lie in Hamocks, and in warm rooms, and when they come in wet, have shift of shirts and drawers, which is all the cloths they wear, and are fed with *bone meat* twice or thrice a week. Collonel *Walron*d seeing his servants when they came home, toyled with their labour, and wet through with their sweating, thought that shifting of their linnen not sufficient refreshing, nor warmth for their bodies, their pores being much opened by their sweating; and therefore resolved to send into *England* for rug Gowns, such as poor people wear in Hospitals, that so when they



they had shifted themselves, they might put on those Gowns, and lye down and rest them in their Hamocks : For the Hamocks being but thin, and they having nothing on but Shirts and Drawers; when they awak'd out of their sleeps, they found themselves very cold; and a cold taken there, is harder to be recovered, than in *England*, by how much the body is infeebl'd by the great toyl, and the Sun's heat, which cannot but very much exhaust the spirits of bodies unaccustomed to it. But this care and charity of Collonel *Walrond's*, lost him nothing in the conclusion; for, he got such love of his servants, as they thought all too little they could do for him; and the love of the servants there, is of much concernment to the Masters, not only in their diligent and painful labour, but in fore-seeing and preventing mischiefs that often happen, by the carelessness and slothfulness of retchless servants; sometimes by laying fire so negligently, as whole lands of Canes and Houses too, are burnt down and consumed, to the utter ruine and undoing of their Masters : For, the materials there being all combustible, and apt to take fire, a little oversight, as the fire of a Tobacco-pipe, being knockt out against a dry stump of a tree, has set it on fire, and the wind fanning that fire, if a land of Canes be but near, and they once take fire, all that are down the wind will be burnt up. Water there is none to quench it, or if it were, a hundred *Negroes* with buckets were not able to do it; so violent and spreading a fire this is, and such a noise it makes, as if two Armies, with a thousand shot of either side, were continually giving fire, every knot of every Cane, giving as great a report as a Pistol. So that there is no way to stop the going on of this flame, but by cutting down and removing all the Canes that grow before it, for the breadth of twenty or thirty foot down the wind, and there the *Negroes* to stand and beat out the fire, as it creeps upon the ground, where the Canes are cut down. And I have seen some *Negroes* so earnest to stop this fire, as with their naked feet to tread, and with their naked bodies to tumble, and roll upon it; so little they regard their own smart or safety, in respect of their Masters benefit. The are before I came away, there were two eminent Planters in the Island, that with such an accident as this, lost at least 10000 l. sterling, in the value of the Canes that were burnt; the one, Mr. *James Holduppe*, the other, Mr. *Constantine Silvester* : And the latter had not only his Canes, but his house burnt down to the ground. This, and much more mischief has been done, by the negligence and wilfulness of servants. And yet some cruel Masters will provoke their Servants so, by extream ill usage, and often and cruel beating them, as they grow desperate, and so joyn together to revenge themselves upon them.

A little before I came from thence, there was such a combination amongst them, as the like was never seen there before. Their sufferings being grown to a great height, and their daily complainings to one another (of the intolerable burdens they labour'd under) being spread throughout the Island; at the last, some amongst them, whose spirits were not able to endure such slavery, resolved to break through it, or dye in the act; and so conspired with some others of their acquaintance, whose sufferings were equal, if not above theirs; and their



their spirits no way inferiour, resolved to draw as many of the discontented party into this plot, as possibly they could; and those of this persuasion, were the greatest numbers of Servants in the Island. So that a day was appointed to fall upon their Masters, and cut all their throats, and by that means, to make themselves only freemen, but Masters of the Island. And so closely was this plot carried, as no discovery was made, till the day before they were to put it in act: And then one of them, either by the failing of his courage, or some new obligation from the love of his Master, revealed this long plotted conspiracy; and so by this timely advertisement, the Masters were saved: Justice *Hetherfall* (whose servant this was) sending Letters to all his friends, and they to theirs, and so one to another, till they were all secured; and, by examination, found out the greatest part of them; whereof eighteen of the principal men in the conspiracy, and they the first leaders and contrivers of the plot, were put to death, for example to the rest. And the reason why they made examples of so many, was, they found these so haughty in their resolutions, and so incorrigible, as they were like enough to become Actors in a second plot; and so they thought good to secure them; and for the rest, to have a special eye over them.

*Negroes.*

It has been accounted a strange thing, that the *Negroes*, being more than double the numbers of the Christians that are there, and they accounted a bloody people, where they think they have power or advantages; and the more bloody, by how much they are more fearful than others: that these should not commit some horrid massacre upon the Christians, thereby to enfranchise themselves, and become Masters of the Island. But there are three reasons that take away this wonder; the one is, They are not suffered to touch or handle any weapons: The other, That they are held in such awe and slavery, as they are fearful to appear in any daring act; and seeing the mustering of our men, and hearing their Gun-shot, (than which nothing is more terrible to them) their spirits are subjugated to so low a condition, as they dare not look up to any bold attempt. Besides these, there is a third reason, which stops all designs of that kind, and that is, They are fetch'd from several parts of *Africa*, who speak several languages, and by that means, one of them understands not another: For, some of them are fetch'd from *Guinny* and *Binny*, some from *Cutchew*, some from *Angola*, and some from the River of *Gambia*. And in some of these places where petty Kingdoms are, they sell their Subjects, and such as they take in Battle, whom they make slaves; and some mean men sell their Servants, their Children, and sometimes their Wives; and think all good traffick, for such commodities as our Merchants send them.

When they are brought to us, the Planters buy them out of the Ship, where they find them stark naked, and therefore cannot be deceived in any outward infirmity. They choose them as they do Horses in a Market; the strongest, youthfulest, and most beautiful, yield the greatest prices. Thirty pound sterling is a price for the best man *Negro*; and twenty five, twenty six, or twenty seven pound for a Woman; the Children are at easier rates. And we buy them so, as the



the sexes may be equal; for, if they have more Men than Women, the men who are unmarried will come to their Masters, and complain, that they cannot live without Wives, and desire him, they may have Wives. And he tells them, that the next ship that comes, he will buy them Wives, which satisfies them for the present; and so they expect the good time: which the Master performing with them, the bravest fellow is to choose first, and so in order, as they are in place, and every one of them knows his better, and gives him the precedence, as Cows do one another, in passing through a narrow gate; for, the most of them are as near beasts as may be, setting their souls aside. Religion they know none; yet most of them acknowledge a God, as appears by their motions and gestures: For, if one of them do another wrong, and he cannot revenge himself, he looks up to Heaven for vengeance, and holds up both his hands, as if the power must come from thence, that must do him right. Chast they are as any people under the Sun; for, when the men and women are together naked, they never cast their eyes towards the parts that ought to be covered; and those amongst us, that have Breeches and Petticoats, I never saw so much as a kiss, or embrace, or a wanton glance with their eyes between them. Jealous they are of their Wives, and hold it for a great injury and scorn, if another man make the least courtship to his Wife. And if any of their Wives have two Children at a birth, they conclude her false to his Bed, and so no more ado but hang her. We had an excellent Negro in the Plantation, whose name was *Macow*, and was our chief Musician; a very valiant man, and was keeper of our Plantain-Grove. This Negro's Wife was brought to bed of two Children, and her Husband, as their manner is, had provided a cord to hang her. But the Overseer finding what he was about to do, informed the Master of it, who sent for *Macow*, to dissuade him from this cruel act, of murdering his Wife, and used all persuasions that possibly he could, to let him see, that such double births are in Nature, and that divers presidents were to be found amongst us of the like; so that we rather praised our Wives, for their fertility, than blamed them for their falleness. But this prevailed little with him upon whom custom had taken so deep an impression; but resolved, the next thing he did, should be to hang her. Which when the Master perceived, and that the ignorance of the man, should take away the life of the woman, who was innocent of the crime her Husband condemned her for, told him plainly, that if he hang'd her, he himself should be hang'd by her, upon the same bough; and therefore wish'd him to consider what he did. This threatening wrought more with him than all the reasons of Philosophy that could be given him; and so let her alone; but he never car'd much for her afterward, but chose another which he lik'd better. For the Planters there deny not a slave, that is a brave fellow, and one that has extraordinary qualities, two or three Wives, and above that number they seldom go: But no woman is allowed above one Husband.

At the time the wife is to be brought a bed, her Husband removes his board, (which is his bed) to another room (for many several divisions they have, in their little houses,) and none above six foot square)



And leaves his wife to God, and her good fortune, in the room, and upon the board alone, and calls a neighbour to come to her, who gives little help to her delivery, but when the child is born, (which she calls her Pickaninny) she helps to make a little fire near her feet, and that serves instead of Possets, Broaths, and Caudles. In a fortnight, this woman is at work with her Pickaninny at her back, as merry a soul as any is there: If the Overseer be discrete, she is suffer'd to rest her self a little more than ordinary; but if not, she is compelled to do as others do. Times they have of suckling their Children in the fields, and refreshing themselves; and good reason, for they carry burthens on their backs; and yet work too. Some women, whose Pickaninnies are three years old, will, as they work at weeding, which is a stooping work, suffer the hee Pickaninny, to sit a stride upon their backs, like St. George a Horse-back; and there Spur his mother with his heels, and sings and crows on her back, clapping his hands, as if he meant to flye; which the mother is so pleas'd with, as she continues her painful stooping posture, longer than she would do, rather than discompose her Jovial Pickaninny of his pleasure, so glad she is to see him merry. The work which the women do, is most of it vveeding, a stooping and painful vwork; at noon and night they are call'd home by the ring of a Bell, vvhich they have two hours time for their repast at noon; and at night, they rest from six, till six a Clock next morning.

On *Sunday* they rest, and have the vvhole day at their pleasure; and the most of them use it as a day of rest and pleasure; but some of them vvhich will make benefit of that dayes liberty, go vvhich the Mangrove trees grow, and gather the bark, of vvhich they make ropes, vvhich they truck avay for other Commodities, as Shirts and Dravvers.

In the afternoons on *Sundays*, they have their Musick, which is of kettle drums, and those of several sizes; upon the smallest the best Musitian playes, and the other come in as Chorasses: the drum all men know, has but one tone; and therefore variety of tunes have little to do in this musick; and yet so strangely they varie their time, as 'tis a pleasure to the most curious ears, and it was to me one of the strangest noises that ever I heard made of one tone; and if they had the variety of time, which gives the greater scope in Musick, as they have of time, they would do wonders in that Art. And if I had not fallen sick before my coming away, at least seven months in one sickness, I had given them some hints of tunes, which being understood, would have serv'd as a great addition to their harmony; for time without tune, is not an eighth part of the Science of Musick.

I found *Alacow* very apt for it of himself, and one day coming into the house, (which none of the *Negroes* use to do, unless an Officer, as he was,) he found me playing on a Theorbo, and singing to it, which he hearkened very attentively to; and when I had done, he took the Theorbo in his hand, and strook one string, stopping it by degrees upon every fret, and finding the notes to varie, till it came to the body of the instrument; and that the nearer the body of the instrument



strument he stopt, the smaller or higher the sound was, which he found was by the shortning of the string, considered with himself, how he might make some tryal of this experiment upon such an instrument as he could come by; having no hope ever to have any instrument of this kind to practice on. In a day or two after, walking in the Plantine grove, to refresh me in that cool shade, and to delight my self with the sight of those plants, which are so beautiful, as though they left a fresh impression in me when I parted with them, yet upon a review, something is discern'd in their beauty more than I remembered at parting: which caused me to make often repair thither, I found this *Negro* (whose office it was to attend there) being the keeper of that grove, sitting on the ground, and before him a piece of large timber, upon which he had laid cross, six Billets, and having a hand-saw and a hatchet by him, would cut the billets by little and little, till he had brought them to the tunes, he would fit them to; for the shorter they were, the higher the Notes, which he tryed by knocking upon the ends of them with a stick, which he had in his hand. When I found him at it, I took the stick out of his hand, and tryed the sound, finding the six billets to have six distinct notes, one above another, which put me in a wonder, how he of himself, should without teaching do so much. I then shewed him the difference between flats and sharps, which he presently apprehended, as between *F* and *Mi*: and he would have cut two more billets to those tunes, but I had then no time to see it done, and so left him to his own enquiries. I say thus much to let you see that some of these people are capable of learning Arts.

Another, of another kind of speculation I found; but more ingenious than he: and this man with three or four more, were to attend me into the woods, to cut Church wayes, for I was employed sometimes upon publick works; and those men were excellent Axe-men, and because there were many gullies in the way, which were impassable, and by that means I was compell'd to make traverses, up and down in the wood; and was by that in danger to miss of the point, to which I was to make my passage to the Church, and therefore was fain to take a Compass with me, which was a Circumferenter, to make my traverses the more exact, and indeed without which, it could not be done, setting up the Circumferenter, and observing the Needle: This *Negro Sambo* comes to me, and seeing the needle wag, desired to know the reason of its stirring, and whether it were alive: I told him no, but it stood upon a point, and for a while it would stir, but by and by stand still, which he observ'd and found it to be true.

The next question was, why it stood one way, and would not remove to any other point, I told him that it would stand no way but North and South, and upon that shew'd him the four Cardinal points of the compass, East, West, North, South, which he presently learnt by heart, and promis'd me never to forget it. His last question was, why it would stand North, I gave this reason, because of the huge Rocks of Loadstone that were in the North part of the world, which had a quality to draw Iron to it; and this Needle being of Iron, and touch'd with a Loadstone, it would alwayes stand that way.



This point of Philosophy was a little too hard for him, and so he stood in a strange muse; which to put him out of, I bad him reach his axe, and put it near to the Compass, and remove it about; and as he did so, the Needle turned with it, which put him in the greatest admiration that ever I saw a man, and so quite gave over his questions, and desired me, that he might be made a Christian; for, he thought to be a Christian, was to be endued with all those knowledges he wanted.

I promised to do my best endeavour; and when I came home, spoke to the Master of the Plantation, and told him, that poor *Sambo* desired much to be a Christian. But his answer was, That the people of that Island were governed by the Lawes of *England*, and by those Lawes, we could not make a Christian a Slave. I told him, my request was far different from that, for I desired him to make a Slave a Christian. His answer was, That it was true, there was a great difference in that: But, being once a Christian, he could no more account him a Slave, and so lose the hold they had of them as Slaves, by making them Christians; and by that means should open such a gap, as all the Planters in the Island would curse him. So I was struck mute, and poor *Sambo* kept out of the Church; as ingenious, as honest, and as good a natur'd poor soul, as ever wore black, or eat green.

On *Sundays* in the afternoon, their Musick playes, and to dancing they go, the men by themselves, and the women by themselves, no mixt dancing. Their motions are rather what they aim at, than what they do; and by that means, transgress the less upon the *Sunday*; their hands having more of motion than their feet, and their heads more than their hands. They may dance a whole day, and ne'r heat themselves; yet, now and then, one of the activest amongst them will leap bolt upright, and fall in his place again, but without cutting a capre. When they have danc'd an hour or two, the men fall to wrestle, (the Musick playing all the while) and their manner of wrestling is, to stand like two Cocks, with heads as low as their hips; and thrusting their heads one against another, hoping to catch one another by the leg, which sometimes they do: But if both parties be weary, and that they cannot get that advantage, then they raise their heads, by pressing hard one against another, and so having nothing to take hold of but their bare flesh, they close, and grasp one another about the middle, and have one another in the hug, and then a fair fall is given on the back. And thus two or three couples of them are engaged at once, for an hour together, the women looking on: for when the men begin to wrestle, the women leave off their dancing, and come to be spectators of the sport.

When any of them dye, they dig a grave, and at evening they bury him, clapping and wringing their hands, and making a doleful sound with their voices. They are a people of a timorous and fearful disposition, and consequently bloody, when they find advantages. If any of them commit a fault, give him present punishment, but do not threaten him; for if you do, it is an even lay, he will go and hang himself, to avoid the punishment.

What



What their other opinions are in matter of Religion, I know not; but certainly, they are not altogether of the sect of the *Sadduces*: For, they believe a Resurrection, and that they shall go into their own Countrey again, and have their youth renewed. And lodging this opinion in their hearts, they make it an ordinary practice, upon any great fright, or threatning of their Masters, to hang themselves.

But Collonel *Walrond* having lost three or four of his best *Negroes* this way, and in a very little time, caused one of their heads to be cut off, and set upon a pole a dozen foot high; and having done that, caused all his *Negroes* to come forth, and march round about this head, and bid them look on it, whether this were not the head of such an one that hang'd himself. Which they acknowledging, he then told them, That they were in a main error, in thinking they went into their own Countreys, after they were dead; for, this mans head was here, as they all were witnesses of; and how was it possible, the body could go without a head. Being convinc'd by this sad, yet lively spectacle, they changed their opinions; and after that, no more hanged themselves.

When they are sick, there are two remedies that cure them; the one, an outward, the other, an inward medicine. The outward medicine is a thing they call *Negro-oyle*, and 'tis made in *Barbary*, yellow it is as Bees wax, but soft as butter. When they feel themselves ill, they call for some of that, and annoint their bodies, as their breasts, bellies, and sides, and in two dayes they are perfectly well. But this does the greatest cures upon such, as have bruises or strains in their bodies. The inward medicine is taken, when they find any weakness or decay in their spirits and stomachs, and then a dram or two of *kill-devil* revives and comforts them much.

I have been very strict, in observing the shapes of these people; and for the men, they are very well timber'd, that is, broad between the shoulders, full breasted, well filleted, and clean leg'd and may hold good with *Albert Durers* rules, who allowes twice the length of the head, to the breadth of the shoulders, and twice the length of the face, to the breadth of the hips, and according to this rule these men are shap'd. But the women not; for the same great Master of Proportions, allowes to each woman, twice the length of the face to the breadth of the shoulders, and twice the length of her own head to the breadth of the hips. And in that, these women are faulty; for I have seen very few of them; whose hips have been broader than their shoulders, unless they have been very fat. The young Maids have ordinarily very large breasts, which stand strutting out so hard and firm, as no leaping, jumping, or stirring, will cause them to shake any more, than the brawns of their arms. But when they come to be old, and have had five or six Children, their breasts hang down below their Navels, so that when they stoop at their common work of weeding, they hang almost down to the ground, that at a distance, you would think they had six legs: And the reason of this is, they tye the cloaths about their Children's backs, which comes upon their breasts, which by pressing very hard, causes them to hang down to that length. Their



Children, when they are first born, have the palms of their hands and the soles of their feet, of a whitish colour, and the sight of their eyes of a blewish colour, not unlike the eyes of a young Kitling; but, as they grow older, they become black.

Their way of reckoning their ages, or any other notable accident they would remember, is by the Moon; and so accounting from the time of their Childrens births, the time they were brought out of their own Countrey, or the time of their being taken Prisoners, by some Prince or Potentate of their own Country, or any other notorious accidents, that they are resolved to remember, they account by the Moon; as, so many Moons since one of these, and so many Moons since another; and this account they keep as long as they can: But if any of them live long, their Arithmetick fails them, and then they are at a dead fault, and so give over the chase, wanting the skill to hunt counter. For what can poor people do, that are without Letters and Numbers, which is the soul of all business that is acted by Mortals, upon the Globe of this World.

Some of them, who have been bred up amongst the *Portugals*, have some extraordinary qualities, which the others have not; as singing and fencing. I have seen some of these *Portugal Negroes*, at Collonel *James Draxes*, play at Rapier and Dagger very skilfully, with their Stookados, their Imbrocados, and their Passes: And at single Rapier too, after the manner of *Charanza*, with such comeliness; as, if the skill had been wanting, the motions would have pleased you; but they were skilful too, which I perceived by their binding with their points, and nimble and subtle avoidings with their bodies, and the advantages the strongest man had in the close, which the other avoided by the nimbleness and skilfulness of his motion. For, in this Science, I had been so well vers'd in my youth, as I was now able to be a competent Judge. Upon their first appearance upon the Stage, they march towards one another, with a slow majestick pace, and a bold commanding look, as if they meant both to conquer; and coming near together, they shake hands, and embrace one another, with a chearful look. But their retreat is much quicker than their advance, and, being at first distance, change their countenance, and put themselves into their posture; and so after a pass or two, retire, and then to't again: And when they have done their play, they embrace, shake hands, and putting on their smoother countenances, give their respects to their Master, and so go off. For their Singing, I cannot much commend that, having heard so good in *Europe*; but for their voices, I have heard many of them very loud and sweet.

Excellent Swimmers and Divers they are, both men and women. Collonel *Drax* (who was not so strict an observer of Sundayes, as to deny himself lawful recreations) would sometimes, to shew me sport, upon that day in the afternoon, send for one of the *Muscovia Ducks*, and have her put into his largest Pond, and calling for some of his best swimming *Negroes*, commanded them to swim and take this Duck; but forbade them to dive, for if they were not bar'd that play, they would rise up under the Duck, and take her as she swome, or meet her in her diving, and so the sport would have too quick an end.

But



but that play being forbidden, the duck would make them good sport, for they are stronger Ducks, and better Divers by far than ours : and in this chase, there was much of pleasure, to see the various swim-mings of the *Negroes* ; some the ordinary wayes, upon their bellies, some on their backs, some by striking out their right leg and left arm, and then turning on the other side, and changing both their leg and arm, which is a stronger and swifter way of swimming, than any of the others : and while vve were seeing this sport, and observing the diversities, of their swim-mings, a *Negro* maid, vvhose was not there at the beginning of the sport, and therefore heard nothing of the forbidding them to dive, put off her petticoat behind a bush, that was at one end of the Pond, and closely sunk down into the water, and at one diving got to the Duck, pull'd her under water, and went back again the same way she came to the bush, all at one dive. We all thought the Duck had div'd : and expected her appearance above water, but nothing could be seen, till the subtilty was discovered, by a Christian that saw her go in, and so the duck was taken from her. But the trick being so finely and so closely done, I beg'd that the Duck might be given her again, which was granted, and the young girdle much pleased.

Though there be a mark set upon these people, which will hardly ever be vviped off, as of their cruelties vvhenever they have advantages, and of their fearfulness and falseness ; yet no rule so general but hath his acception : for I believe, and I have strong motives to cause me to be of that persuasion, that there are as honest, faithful, and conscionable people amongst them, as amongst those of *Europe*, or any other part of the vvorld.

A hint of this, I vvill give you in a lively example ; and it vvvas in a time vvhen Victuals vvvere scarce, and Plantins vvvere not then so frequently planted, as to afford them enough. So that some of the high spirited and turbulent amongst them, began to mutiny, and had a plot, secretly to be reveng'd on their Master ; and one or two of these were Firemen that made the fires in the furnaces, who were never without store of dry wood by them. These villains, were resolved to make fire to such part of the boyling-house, as they were sure would fire the rest, and so burn all, and yet seem ignorant of the fact, as a thing done by accident. But this plot was discovered, by some of the others who hated mischief, as much as they lov'd it ; and so traduc'd them to their Master, and brought in so many witnesses against them, as they were forc'd to confess, what they meant should have been put in act the next night : so giving them condign punishment, the Master gave order to the overseer that the rest should have a dayes liberty to themselves and their wives, to do what they would ; and withall to allow them a double proportion of victual for three dayes, both which they refus'd : which we all wonder'd at, knowing well how much they lov'd their liberties, and their meat, having been lately pinch'd of the one, and not having overmuch of the other ; and therefore being doubtful what their meaning was in this, suspecting some discontent amongst them, sent for three or four of the best of them, and desir'd to know why they refus'd this favour that was offer'd them, but



receiv'd such an answer : as we little expected ; for they told us, it was not fullness, or slighting the gratuity their Master bestow'd on them, but they would not accept any thing as a recompence for doing that which became them in their duties to do, nor would they have him think, it was hope of reward, that made them to accuse their fellow servants, but an act of Justice, which they thought themselves bound in duty to do, and they thought themselves sufficiently rewarded in the Act. The substance of this, in such language as they had, they delivered, and poor *Sambo* was the Orator, by whose example the others were led both in the discovery of the Plot, and refusal of the gratuity. And withall they said, that if it pleas'd their Master, at any time, to bestow a voluntary boon upon them, be it never so slight, they would willingly and thankfully accept it : and this act might have besecm'd the best Christians, though some of them were denyed Christianity, when they earnestly sought it. Let others have what opinion they please, yet I am of this belief ; that there are to be found amongst them, some who are as morally honest, as Conscienceable, as humble, as loving to their friends, and as loyal to their Masters, as any that live under the Sun ; and one reason they have to be so, is, they set no great value upon their lives : And this is all I can remember concerning the *Negroes*, except of their games, which I could never learn, because they wanted language to teach me.

As for the *Indians*, we have but few, and those fetcht from other Countries ; some from the neighbouring Islands, some from the Main, which we make slaves : the women who are better vers'd in ordering the Cassave and making bread, then the *Negroes*, we imploy for that purpose, as also for making Mobbie : the men we use for footmen, and killing of fish, vvhich they are good at ; vwith their ovvn bowes and arrowvs they vvill go out ; and in a dayes time, kill as much fish, as vvill serve a family of a dozen persons, two or three dayes, if you can keep the fish so long. They are very active men, and apt to learn any thing, sooner than the *Negroes* ; and as different from them in shape, almost as in colour ; the men very broad shoulder'd, deep breasted, with large heads, and their faces almost three square, broad about the eyes and temples, and sharp at the chin, their skins some of them brown, some a bright Bay, they are much craftier, and subtiler then the *Negroes* ; and in their nature falsier ; but in their bodies more active : their women have very small breasts, and have more of the shape of the *Europeans* than the *Negroes*, their hair black and long, a great part whereof hangs down upon their backs, as low as their hanches, with a large lock hanging over either breast, which seldom or never curls : cloaths they scorn to wear, especially if they be well shap'd ; a girdle they use of tape, covered with little smooth shels of fishes, white, and from their flank of one side, to their flank on the other side, a fringe of blew *Eagle* ; which hangs so low as to cover their privities. We had an *Indian* woman, a slave in the house, who was of excellent shape and colour, for it was a pure bright bay ; small breasts, with the nipples of a porphyrie colour, this woman would not be woo'd by any means to wear Cloaths. She chanc'd to be with Child, by a Christian servant, and lodging in the *Indian* house, amongst other women,



women of her own Country, where the Christian servants, both men and women came; and being very great, and that her time was come to be delivered, loath to fall in labour before the men, walk'd down to a Wood, in which was a Pond of water, and thereby the side of the Pond, brought her self a bed; and presently washing her Child in some of the water of the Pond, lap'd it up in such rags, as she had begg'd of the Christians; and in three hours time came home, with her Child in her arms, a lusty Boy, frolick and lively.

This *Indian* dwelling near the Sea-coast, upon the Main, an *English* ship put in to a Bay, and sent some of her men a shoar, to try what victuals or water they could find, for in some distress they were: But the *Indians* perceiving them to go up so far into the Country, as they were sure they could not make a safe retreat, intercepted them in their return, and fell upon them, chaling them into a Wood, and being dispersed there, some were taken, and some kill'd: but a young man amongst them stragling from the rest, was met by this *Indian* Maid, who upon the first sight fell in love with him, and hid him close from her Countrymen (the *Indians*) in a Cave, and there fed him, till they could safely go down to the shoar, where the ship lay at anchor, expecting the return of their friends. But at last, seeing them upon the shoar, sent the long-Boat for them, took them aboard, and brought them away. But the youth, when he came ashore in the *Barbadoes*, forgot the kindness of the poor maid, that had ventured her life for his safety, and sold her for a slave, who was as free born as he: And so poor *Tarico* for her love, lost her liberty.

Now for the Masters, I have yet said but little, nor am able to say half of what they deserve. They are men of great abilities and parts, otherwise they could not go through, with such great works as they undertake; the managing of one of their Plantations, being a work of such a latitude, as will require a very good head-peece, to put in order, and continue it so.

I can name a Planter there, that feeds daily two hundred mouths, and keeps them in such order, as there are no mutinies amongst them; and yet of several nations. All these are to be employed in their several abilities, so as no one be idle. The first work to be considered, is Weeding, for unless that be done, all else (and the Planter too) will be undone, and if that be neglected but a little time, it will be a hard matter to recover it again, so fast will the weeds grow there. But the ground being kept clean, 'tis fit to bear any thing that Country will afford. After weeding comes Planting, and they account two seasons in the year best, and that is, *May* and *November*; but Canes are to be planted at all times, that they may come in, one field after another; otherwise, the work will stand still. And commonly they have in a field that is planted together, at one time, ten or a dozen acres. This work of planting and weeding, the Master himself is to see done; unless he have a very trusty and able Overseer; and without such a one, he will have too much to do. The next thing he is to consider, is the Ingenio, and what belongs to that; as, the Ingenio it self, which is the *Primum Mobile* of the whole work, the Boyling-house, with the Coppers and Furnaces, the Filling room, the Still-house,



and Cureing-house ; and in all these, there are great casualties. If any thing in the Rollers, as the Goudges, Sockets, Sweeps, Cogs, or Bray-trees, be at fault, the whole work stands still ; or in the Boyling-house, if the Frame which holds the Coppers, (and is made of Clinkers, fastned with plaister of *Paris*) if by the violence of the heat from the Furnaces, these Frames crack or break, there is a stop in the work, till that be mended. Or if any of the Coppers have a mischance, and be burnt, a new one must presently be had, or there is a stay in the work. Or if the mouths of the Furnaces, (which are made of a sort of stone, which we have from *England*, and we call it there, high gate stone) if that, by the violence of the fire, be softened, that it moulder away, there must new be provided, and laid in with much art, or it will not be. Or if the bars of Iron, which are in the floor of the Furnace, when they are red hot (as continually they are) the fire-man, throw great shides of wood in the mouths of the Furnaces, hard and carelessly, the weight of those logs, will bend or break those bars, (though strongly made) and there is no repairing them, without the work stand still ; for all these depend upon one another, as wheels in a Clock. Or if the Stills be at fault, the *kill-devil* cannot be made. But the main impediment and stop of all, is the loss of our Cattle, and amongst them, there are such diseases, as I have known in one Plantation, thirty that have dyed in two dayes. And I have heard, that a Planter, an eminent man there, that clear'd a dozen acres of ground, and rail'd it about for pasture, with intention, as soon as the grass was grown to a great height, to put in his working Oxen ; which accordingly he did, and in one night fifty of them dyed ; so that such a loss as this, is able to undo a Planter, that is not very well grounded. What it is that breeds these diseases, we cannot find, unless some of the Plants have a poysonous quality ; nor have we yet found out cures for these diseases ; Chickens guts being the best remedy was then known, and those being chop'd or minc'd, and given them in a horn, with some liquor mixt to moisten it, was thought the best remedy : yet it recovered very few. Our Horses too have killing diseases amongst them, and some of them have been recovered by Glisters, which we give them in pipes, or large Seringes made of wood, for the same purpose. For, the common diseases, both of Cattle and Horses, are obstructions and bindings in their bowels ; and so lingring a disease it is, to those that recover, as they are almost worn to nothing before they get well. So that if any of these stops continue long, or the Cattle cannot be recruited in a reasonable time, the work is at a stand ; and by that means, the Canes grow over ripe, and will in a very short time have their juice dryed up, and will not be worth the grinding.

Now to recruit these Cattle, Horses, Camels, and Assinigos, who are all liable to these mischances and decayes, Merchants must be consulted, ships provided, and a competent Cargo of goods adventured, to make new voyages to forraign parts, to supply those losses ; and when that is done, the casualties at Sea are to be considered, and those happen several wayes, either by shipwrack, piracy, or fire. A Master of a ship, and a man accounted both able, stout, and honest, having transpor-



transported goods of several kinds, from *England* to a part of *Africa*; the River of *Gambra*, and had there exchanged his Commodities for *Negroes*, which was that he intended to make his voyage of, caused them all to be ship'd, and did not, as the manner is, shackle one to another, and make them sure; but having an opinion of their honesty and faithfulness to him, as they had promised; and he being a credulous man, and himself good natur'd and merciful, suffered them to go loose, and they being double the number of those in the Ship, found their advantages, got weapons in their hands, and fell upon the Sayers, knocking them on the heads, and cutting their throats so fast, as the Master found they were all lost, out of any possibility of saving; and so went down into the Hold, and blew all up with himself; and this was before they got out of the River. These, and several other wayes there will happen, that extreamly retard the work of Sugar-making.

Now let us consider how many things there are to be thought on, that go to the actuating this great work, and how many cares to prevent the mischances, that are incident to the retarding, if not the frustrating of the whole work; and you will find them wise and provident men, that go on and prosper in a work, that depends upon so many contingents.

This I say, to stop those mens mouths, that lye here at home, and expect great profit in their adventures, and never consider, through what difficulty, industry and pains it is acquired. And thus much I thought good to say, of the abilities of the Planters.

The next thing is, of their natures and dispositions, which I found compliable in a high degree to all virtues, that those of the best sort of Gentlemen call Excellent; as, Civilly intreating of Strangers, with communicating to them any thing within the compass of their knowledge, that might be beneficial to them, in any undertaking amongst them, and assisting them in it, giving them harbour for themselves and servants. And if their intentions were to buy Plantations, to make diligent enquiries for such as they desired, and to drive the bargain as near the wind for their advantages, as possibly they could, and to put themselves in some travels, in settling the business: Or, if that could not do them service, to recommend them to any friend they had, that lay more fit and convenient for their purpose. Loving, friendly, and hospitable one to another; and though they are of several Perswasions, yet, their discretions ordered every thing so well, as there never were any fallings out between them: which to prevent, some of them of the better sort, made a Law amongst themselves, that whosoever nam'd the word *Roundhead* or *Cavalier*, should give to all those that heard him, a Shot and a Turkey, to be eaten at his house that made the forfeiture; which sometimes was done purposely, that they might enjoy the company of one another; and sometimes this Shot and this Turkey would draw on a dozen dishes more, if company were accordingly: So frank, so loving, and so good natur'd were these Gentlemen one to another; and to express their affections yet higher, they had particular names one to another, as, Neighbour, Friend, Brother, Sister: So that I perceived nothing wanting, that might make



up a firm and lasting friendship amongst them; though after I came away, it was otherwise.

Sports and exercises they never us'd any, as Bowling, Shooting, Hunting, or Hawking; for indeed there are no places fit for the two first exercises, the Countrey being so Rocky, uneven and full of stumps of trees: and for the other two, they want game; for there are no kind of wild beasts in the Island, nor any fowl fit to hawk at; besides the Country is so woody, as there is no Champion to fly in; Pheasants, Partridges, Heathpoults, Quails, or Rayles, never set foot upon this ground, unless they were brought there; and if so, they never liv'd: and for Hawkes, I never saw but two, and those the merriest stirrers that ever I saw fly; the one of them was in an evening just at Sun setting, which is the time the Bats rise, and so are to a good height; and at a downcome, this *Barbary* Faulcon took one of them and carried it away.

Tame beasts  
that are li-  
ving on the  
Island.  
Camels.

If I shall begin with the largest, first I must name Camels, and these are very useful beasts, but very few will live upon the Island: divers have had them brought over, but few know how to dyet them. Captain *Higginbotham* had four or five, which were of excellent use, not only for carrying down sugar to the bridge, but of bringing from thence hogheads of Wine, Beer, or Vinegar, which horses cannot do, nor can Carts pass for Gullies, and Negroes cannot carry it, for the reasons afore-mentioned; a good Camel will carry 1600 l. weight, and go the surest of any beast.

Horses.

We have from several parts of the world, *England*, *Holland*, *Bonavista*, the Isles of *Cape Verd*, *Virginia*, *New England*, and some from one of the *Leward Islands* in the *Carribbies* call'd *Currisa*, besides some we breed, and very strong and good mettled, bold and fit to charge on: these horses we use either for the Ingenio, or the Saddle, seldom or never for carrying sugar, the gullies being so steep.

Oxen, Bulls,  
and Cows.

We have from the several places I have nam'd, but chiefly Bulls, from the Isle of *May*, and *Bonavista*; which are Cattle, being well taught, will work the orderliest that I have seen any. With these, we have Cows, and some of them we use for the Payle, and some for the Ingenio, some we breed, and have speedier increase than in *Europe*, for here a Calf will bring a Calf in fourteen months; and if it were not for the diseases that take away our Cattle, we should not need to fetch any from forraign parts.

Assinigoes.

Are here of exceeding great use in the Island, in carrying our sugar, down to the bridge, which by reason of the gullies, the Horses cannot do: besides when the great rains fall, the wayes are so deep, and full of roots, as when a horse puts in his leg between two roots, he can hardly pull it out again, having a great weight on his back; and if he fall, 'tis hard lifting him up. Whereas the Assinigoes pick and choose their way, and sometimes choose out little wayes in the wood, such as they know are fit for them to pass, which horses cannot do, because the wayes are now too narrow for them, or if they were not, they would want much the wit of the Assinigoes, to pick and choose their way. And if by chance the Assinigoes fall, two Negroes are able to help him up, and we seldom use more than two, for assistance to the Christian



Christian that has the charge of the carriages. One of these Affinigoes will carry 150 weight of sugar; some of the strongest 200 weight; our Planters have been very desirous if it were possible to get Mules there, for they would be of excellent use, in carrying their sugars, and working in the Ingenio; but they had got none when I was there, but they were making tryals, either to get some of those, or some large Horse Affinigoes, to breed with the Mares of that Country.

We have here in abundance, but not wild or loose, for if they were they would do more harm than their bodies are worth; they are enclosed, and every man knows his own: those that rear them to sell, do commonly sell them for a groat a pound; weighing them alive; sometimes six pence if flesh be dear. There was a Planter in the Island, that came to his neighbour, and said to him, Neighbour I hear you have lately bought good store of servants, out of the last ship that came from *England*, and I hear withall, that you want provisions, I have great want of a woman servant; and would be glad to make an exchange; if you will let me have some of your womans flesh, you shall have some of my hogs flesh; so the price was set a groat a pound for the hogs flesh, and six-pence for the Womans flesh. The scales were set up, and the Planter had a Maid that was extream fat, lasie, and good for nothing, her name was *Honor*; The man brought a great fat sow, and put it in one scale, and *Honor* was put in the other; but when he saw how much the Maid outweighed his Sow, he broke off the bargain, and would not go on: though such a case as this, may seldom happen, yet 'tis an ordinary thing there, to sell their servants to one another for the time they have to serve; and in exchange, receive any commodities that are in the Island; I have said as much already of the largeness weight and goodness of these hogs as is needful, and therefore I shall need no more.

Hogs.

We have here, but very few; and those do not like well the pasture, being very unfit for them; a soure tough and sapless gras, and some poysonous plant they find, which breeds diseases amongst them, and so they dye away, they never are fat, and we thought a while the reason had been, their too much heat with their wool, and so got them often shorn; but that would not cure them: yet the Ews bear alwayes two Lambs: their flesh when we tryed any of them, had a very faint taste, so that I do not think they are fit to be bred or kept in that Countrey: other sheep we have there, which are brought from *Guinny* and *Binnny*, and those have hair growing on them, instead of wool; and liker Goats than Sheep, yet their flesh is tasted more like Mutton than the other.

Sheep.

We have in greater plenty, and they prosper far better than the Sheep, and I find little difference in the taste of their flesh, and the Goats here; they live for the most part in the woods, sometimes in the pasture, but are alwayes inclosed in a fence, that they do not trespass upon their neighbours ground; for whosoever finds Hog or Goat of his neighbours, either in his Canes, Corn, Potatoes, Bonavist, or Plantines, may by the lawes of the Island shoot him through with a Gun, and kill him; but then he must presently send to the owner, to let him know where he is.

Goats.



Birds.

The Birds of this place (setting two aside) are hardly worth the pains of describing; yet, in order, as I did the Beasts, I will set them down. The biggest is a direct Bussard, but somewhat less than our grey Bussards in *England*, somewhat swifter of wing; and the only good they do, is, sometimes to kill the Rats. The next to him in bigness, is the larger Turtle Dove, and of them, there is great store in the Island: 'tis a much handsomer bird, both in shape and colour, than ours in *England*, and is very good meat. Next to her is the lesser Turtle, a far finer bird than she, but of a contrary shape; for this is of the shape of a Partridge, but her plumidge gray, and a red brown under the wings; a prettier bird I do not know, of so few glorious colours, her tune like the other. The next is a bird like a Thrush, of a melancholly look, her feathers never smooth, but alwayes ruffled, as if she were mewling, her head down, her shoulders up, as if her neck were broke. This bird has for three or four notes, the loudest and sweetest, that ever I heard; if she had variety, certainly no bird could go beyond her; she looks alwayes, as if she were sick or melancholly.

Another there is, not much unlike a Wren, but big as a Thrush; and this is as merry and jolly, as the other is sad; and as she sits on a stick, jets, and lifts up her train, looking with so earnest and merry a countenance, as if she would invite you to come to her, and will sit till you come very near her. This bird I never heard sing. The next is a Black-bird, with white eyes, and that so ill becomes her, as she is accounted an unhandsome bird; her voice harsh, somewhat like our Jay in *England*; they go in great flocks, and are harmful birds, for they are great devourers of corn, and blossoms of trees, and the Planters with them destroyed, though they know not which way. They are a kind of Stares, for they walk, and do not hop as other birds. One thing I observe in these birds, which I never saw in any but them, and that is, when they fly, they put their train into several postures; one while they keep it straight, as other birds; sometimes they turn it edge-ways, as the tail of a fish, and by and by put it three square, with the covering feather a top, and the sides downwards. The next is of the colour of a Feldefare, but the head seems too big for her body, and for that reason they call her a Counsellor; her flying is extream wanton; and for her tune, 'tis such as I have not heard any like her, not for the sweetness, but the strangeness of it, for she performs that with her voice, that no instrument can play, nor no voice sing, but hers; and that is, quarter notes, her song being composed of five tones, and every one a quarter of a note higher than other. Mr. *John Coprario*, a rare composer of Musick, and my dear friend, told me once, that he was studying a curiosity in musick, that no man had ever attempted to do; and that was, of quarter notes; but he not being able to go through with it, gave it over: But if he had liv'd to have gone with me to the *Barbadoes*, this Bird should have taught him. Under this size there are none considerable; Sparrowes, Haysocks, Finches, Yellow Hamers, Titmice, and divers others of that sort, for which I have no names. But the last and strangest of all, is, that which we call the humming bird, much less than a Wren, not much



much bigger than an humble Bee, her body long, her wings small and sharp, of a fullen sad green, no pleasant colours on her; her manner of feeding is, just as a Bee, putting her bill into a blossom or a flower, tastes as lightly as a Bee, never sitting, but purring with her wings, all the time she staves with the flower; and the motion of her wings are as nimble and swift, as a Bee: We have no way to take her, but by shooting sand out of a Gun at her, which mazes her for the present, that you may take her up; but there is no way to keep her alive, her feeding being such, as none can give her but her self. Now for the Birds that live upon the outward verge of the Island, I have not much to say. Sometimes Teals come to our Ponds, three or four couple together, but never go away; for when we see them, we take a gun, and coming near, shoot them; and the report of the gun frights, and makes those that are alive fly away, and fetch one turn, and come back to see their fellows dead, and alight to them, and so we shoot and shoot again till all be kill'd; for they will alwayes come back to see their dead friends. The like we do with those birds we call Oxen and Kine, which come to us in like manner. Small Swallows we have now and then, but somewhat different from ours in colour.

But there is a Bird they call, a Man of war, and he is much bigger than a Heron, and flies out to Sea upon discoveries, (for they never light upon the Sea) to see what ships are coming to the Island; and when they return, the Islanders look out, and say, a ship is coming, and find it true. I have seen one of them, as high as I could look, to meet us twenty leagues from land; and some others, almost as big as Ducks, that in an evening came in a flock of twenty, or there about, and they made divers turns about the ship, a little before Sun-setting; and when it grew dark, they lighted upon the ribs of the ship, and with little nooses of packthred, the Saylers caught them; they were very fat and good.

Though the Bat be no Bird, yet she flies with wings, and alwayes a little before Sun-setting, at which time they come out of holes, chimneys, and hollow trees, and will raise them to a great height, feeding themselves with flies that they find in the air, at that time of the evening.

Having done with Beasts and Birds, we will enquire what other lesser Animals or Insects there are upon the Island, of which, Snakes are the chief, because the largest; and I have seen some of those a yard and a half long. The only harm they do, is to our Pigeon-houses, and milk-pans; so that if we leave any hole in the bottom of the house, where they can come in, they will get to the nests, and devour the young Pigeons, if they be not over big. And yet 'tis strange to see, what great morsels they will swallow; slide they will up against a wall, if it be but perpendicular; but if it be declining outward, they cannot get up, but will fall back ten foot high, if they be hindred by any stooping of the wall; for which reason vve make jetties, near the top of such rooms, as vve vwill keep them out of; they have climbed six foot high upon the outside of a vwall, come in at a vvindow, down on the inside, skim our milk pans, and avway again: Till vve took one of them there, vve knew not by vwhat means our pans vvere thus skim'd,

R

*Of lesser Animals and Insects.*



skim'd. They never sting any body, nor is there any venomous beast in the Island. The next to these are Scorpions, of which, some of them are as big as Rats, smooth, and coloured like a Snake, somewhat blower, their bellies inclining to yellow, very nimble and quick to avoid their pursuers: yet, the Snakes will now and then take them, between whom there is a great conflict, before the quarrel be decided; for the Scorpions that are large, are very strong, and will maintain the fight sometimes half an hour; I have seen them wrestle together a good part of that time: But in conclusion, the Snakes get the better, and devour the other. These Scorpions were never known to hurt man or beast. Toads or Frogs we have none.

Lizards we had in great plenty, but the Cats kill them so fast in the houses, as they are much lessened in their number. This little Animal loves much to be where men are, and are delighted to stand and gaze in their faces, and hearken to their discourse. These with us, I think, are different from those of *Europe*; the bodies of ours are about four inches long, the tail near as much, headed not much unlike a Snake; their colour, when they are pleased, a pure grass-green on the back, bleuish toward the side, and yellowish on the belly; four legs, and those very nimble: When they see at distance some of their own kind, that they are angry with, they swell a little bigger, and change their colour, from green to russet or hair-colour, which abates much of their beauty, for their green is very pleasant and beautiful: Cold they are as Frogs. Next to these are Cockroches, a creature of the bigness and shape of a Beetle; but of a pure hair-colour, which would set him off the better, if he had not an ugly wabbling gate, but that makes him unhandsome. He appears in the evening when 'tis dark, and will, when he pleases, fly to your bed, when he finds you sleeping, and bite your skin, till he fetch blood, if you do not wake; and if you take a Candle to search for him, he shifts away and hides himself, as the Purneses do in *Italy*. The Negroes, who have thick skins, and by reason of their hard labour, sleep soundly at night, are bitten so, as far as the breadth of both your hands together, their skins are rac'd, as if it were done with a curry-comb. Next to these tormentors, are Musketos, who bite and sting worse than the Gnats and Stouts, that sting Cattle in *England*, (and are commonly felt in marshy ground). And next to them Meriwings, and they are of so small a size, and so thin and aereall, as you can hardly discern them, but by the noise of their wings, which is like a small bugle horn, at a great distance: Where they sting, there will rise a little knob, as big as a pease, and last so a whole day; the mark will not be gone in twenty four hours. Caterpillars we have sometimes in abundance, and they do very great harm; for, they light upon the leaves of our Potatoes, which we call Slips, and eat them all away, and come so low, as to eat of the Root too: And the onely remedy we have, is, to drive a flock of Turkies into the place where they are, and they will devour them. The harms these vermine do us, is double; first, in the slips, which is the food, we give our Horses, and is cast into the rack; and in our Potatoes, being the root of these slips, which we our selves feed upon.



Flyes we have of so many kinds, (from two inches long with the great horns, which we keep in boxes, and are shewed by *John Tredescan* amongst his rarities) to the least Atome, as it would be a weary work to set them down; as also the sudden production of them, from Nothing to Maggets, from Maggets to Flyes; and there is not only a race of all these kinds, that go in a generation, but upon new occasions, new kinds; as, after a great downfall of rain, when the ground has been extreemly moistned, and softned with the water, I have walk'd out upon a dry walk (which I made my self) in an evening, and there came about me an army of such flyes, as I had never seen before, nor after; and they rose, as I conceived, out of the earth: They were as big bodied as Bees, but far larger wings; harm they did us none, but only lighted on us; their colour between ash-colour and purple.

The next of these moving little Animals, are Ants, or Pismires, and those are but of a small size, but great in industry; and that which gives them means to attain to their ends, is, they have all one soul. If I should say, they are here or there, I should do them wrong; for they are every where, under ground, where any hollow or loose earth is, amongst the roots of trees, upon the bodies, branches, leaves, and fruit of all trees, in all places, without the houses and within, upon the sides, walls, windows, and roofs without; and on the floors, side-walls, sealings, and windows within; tables, cupbords, beds, stools, all are covered with them, so that they are a kind of Ubiquitaries. The Cockroaches are their mortal enemies, and though they are not able to do them any mischief, being living, (by reason they are far stronger and mightier than a hundred of them, and if they should force any one of them with multitudes, he has the liberty of his wings to make his escape) yet, when they find him dead, they will divide him amongst them into Atomes; and to that purpose, they carry him home to their houses or nests. We sometimes kill a Cockroach, and throw him on the ground, and mark what they will do with him; his body is bigger than a hundred of them, and yet they will find the means to take hold of him, and lift him up; and having him above ground, away they carry him, and some go by as ready assistants, if any be weary; and some are the Officers that lead and shew the way to the hole into which he must pass; and if the Vancurriers perceive, that the body of the Cockroach lies cross, and will not pass through the hole, or arch, through which they mean to carry him, order is given, and the body turned endwise, and this done a foot before they come to the hole, and that without any stop or stay; and this is observable, that they never pull contrary wayes.

Those that are curious, and will prevent their coming on their Tables, Cupbords, or Beds, have little hollows of timber, fill'd with water, for the feet of these to stand in; but all this will not serve their turn; for they will some of them, go up to the seiling, and let themselves fall upon the teasters of the Beds, Cupbords, and Tables.

To prevent them from coming on our shelves where our meat



is kept, we hang them to the roof by ropes, and tar those ropes, and the roofs over them, as also the strings of our Hamocks, for which reason we avoid them better in Hamocks than in beds.

Sometimes when we try conclusions upon them; we take the Carpet off the Table, and shake it, so that all the Ants drop off, and rub down the legs and feet of those tables, (which stood not in water) and having done so: we lay on the Carpet again, and set upon it a Sallet dish, or Trencher, with sugar in it, which some of them in the room will presently smell, and make towards it as fast as they can, which is a long journey, for he must begin at the foot of the table, and come as high as the inside of the Carpet, and so go down to the bottom and up of the outside of the Carpet, before he gets on the table, and then to the sugar, which he smells to; and having found it, returns again the same way, without taking any for his pains, and informs all his friends of this booty; who come in thousands, and ten thousands, and in an instant, fetch it all away; and when they are thickest upon the table, clap a large book (or any thing fit for that purpose) upon them, so hard as to kill all that are under it, and when you have done so, take away the book, and leave them to themselves, but a quarter of an hour, and when you come again, you shall find all those bodies carried away. Other tryals we make of their Ingenuity, as this. Take a Pewter dish, and fill it half full of water, into which put a little Gally pot fill'd with Sugar, and the Ants will presently find it, and come upon the Table; but when they perceive it environ'd with water, they try about the brims of the dish, where the Gally pot is nearest, and there the most venturous amongst them, commits himself to the water, though he be conscious how ill a swimmer he is, and is drown'd in the adventure: the next is not warn'd by his example, but ventures too; and is alike drown'd, and many more, so that there is a small foundation of their bodies to venture on; and then they come faster than ever, and so make a bridge of their own bodies, for their friends to pass on; neglecting their lives for the good of the publique; for before they make an end, they will make way for the rest, and become Masters of the Prize. I had a little white sugar which I desired to keep from them, and was devising which way to do it, and I knockt a Nail in the beam of the room, and fastned to it a brown thread, at the lower end of which thread, I tyed a large shell of a fish, which being hollow, I put the sugar in, and lockt the door, thinking it safe; but when I returned, I found three quarters of my sugar gone, and the Ants in abundance, ascending and descending, like the Angels on *Jacob's Ladder*, as I have seen it painted, so that I found no place safe, from these more than busie Creatures.

Another sort of Ants there are, but nothing so numerous or harmful as the other, but larger by far; these build great nests, as big as Bee hives, against a wall, or a tree, of Clay and Lome, sometimes within doors, and in it several little Mansions, such as Bees make for themselves, but nothing so curious; these the Cockroaches and Lizards meet withall, way-laying them near their nests, and feed upon them: which to prevent, they make from thence many and several galleries



galleries that reach some of them six or seven yards several wayes, of the same earth they do their nests; so that for such a distance as that, they are not to be perceiv'd, by any of their enemies, and commonly, their Avenues go out amongst leaves, or moss, or some other Covert, that they may not be perceiv'd; but the most of these are in the woods; for we have destroyed their nests, and their galleries within doors so often, as they are weary of building, and so quit the house: I can say nothing of these, but that they are the quickest at their work of building, of any little Creatures that ever I saw. Spiders we have, the beautifullest and largest that I have seen, and the most curious in their webs; they are not at all Poysonous.

One sort more of these harmful Animals there are, which we call Chegoes; and these are so little that you would hardly think them able to do any harm at all, and yet these will do more mischief than the Ants, and if they were as numerous as harmful, there were no induring of them; they are of a shape, not much unlike a Louse, but no bigger than a mite that breeds in cheese, his colour blewish: an *Indian* has laid one of them, on a sheet of white paper, and with my spectacles on I could hardly discern him; yet this very little Enemy, can and will do much mischief to mankind. This vermine will get thorough your Stocken, and in a pore of your skin, in some part of your feet, commonly under the nail of your toes, and there make a habitation to lay his offspring, as big as a small Tare, or the bag of a Bee, which will cause you to go very lame, and put you to much smarting pain. The *Indian* women have the best skill to take them out, which they do by putting in a small pointed pin or Needle, at the hole where he came in, and winding the point about the bag, loosen him from the flesh, and so take him out. He is of a blewish colour, and is seen through the skin, but the *Negroes* whose skins are of that colour (or near it) are in ill case, for they cannot find where they are; by which means they are many of them very lame: some of these Chegoes are poysonous, and after they are taken out, the Orifice in which they lay, will fester and rankle for a fortnight after they are gone. I have had ten taken out of my feet in a morning, by the most unfortunate *Yarico*, an *Indian* woman.

Some kind of Animals more there are in the woods, which because I never saw, I cannot speak their forms: some of them I guess are no bigger than Crickets, they lye all day in holes and hollow trees, and as soon as the Sun is down, they begin their tunes, which are neither singing nor crying, but the shrillest voyces that ever I heard: nothing can be so nearly resembl'd to it; as the mouths of a pack of small beagles at a distance; and so lively, and chirping the noise is, as nothing can be more delightful to the ears, if there were not too much of it, for the musick hath no intermission till morning, and then all is hush.

I had forgotten amongst my fishes to mention Crabs; but because this kind of them live upon the land, I might very well overslip them, and now bring them in, amongst these Animals: they are small Crabs, such as women sell by dozens in baskets in the streets, and of that colour raw and alive, as these are boyl'd, which are of a reddish colour.



These Crabs are coming from the Sea all the year long, (except in *March*) they hide themselves in holes, and in houses, and sometimes in hollow trees; and into every part of the Island they come, sometimes we meet them going up stairs in the night, sometimes in our low rooms, sometimes in our Gardens, where they eat the herbs. We hold them not good meat: But the Negroes will often upon *Sundays* go a Crabbing, and think them very great dainties when they are boyled. These Crabs in *March* come all out of their holes, and march down towards the Sea in such multitudes, as to cover a great part of the ground where they go, and no hedge, wall, or house can stop them, but they will over. As we ride, our Horses tread on them, they are so thick on the ground. And they have this sense, to go the nearest way to the Sea, from the place where they are, and nothing can stop or stay them, but death: 'Tis the time I guess they go to breed.

Having past through all the reasonable and sensitives Creatures of this Island, I come now to say somewhat of the Vegetables, as of Trees: and of those there are such infinite varieties, as to mention all, were to loose myself in a wood; for, it were impossible for any one in the time I stayed there, (though he studied nothing else) to give an account of the particulars. And therefore I will onely mention such, as for beauty or use, are of most and greatest esteem in the Island.

And for that there is none of more use than the *Physick-Nut*, I will begin first with that, which though the name seem to promise health, yet it has poyson lodg'd secretly within, and that poyson may bring health, being physically applyed, and in fit times and seasons. The reason why I think it poysonous, is, because Cattle will not brouse, nor feed on the leaves, nor willingly come near the shade. This tree will grow to be eighteen foot high, but we have a way to employ it; as for beauty and use, there are none such in the Island. This tree (*which is of the height as I have told you*) has many sprigs, of four, five, and six foot long; we lop them one after another, and as we take off the branches, cut stakes of them, about four foot and a half long, and stick them in the ground an inch deep, and no more, close to one another, in the manner of Palissadoes; and so, with a rail of either side, to keep them even, and here and there a spur or braket on either side, to keep them steady for a month; by which time, they will not only gather roots to strengthen them, and hold them up, but leaves to cover their tops, and so even and smooth they fall, as to cover the tops of themselves, at least two foot and a half downward; and will in a month more, be so firmly rooted in the earth, as you may remove your rails and brakets, to assist those that are planted after them, in other places. These leaves being large, smooth, and beautifully shap'd, and of a full green, appear to your eyes like so much green Sattin, hang'd on a rail or line, so even and so smooth they hang naturally.

The stems will grow apace, but more in their bigness than their height, (for you may if you please, keep them at this height, by cutting off the tops) and in a while they will not only touch, but imbody them-



themselves one into another; and then they become as strong and useful a fence, as any can be made, so close, as to keep in Conies, and keep out Rats; for, neither Cattle nor Vermine love to come near it. And as it is a beautiful and useful fence, for Gardens and Orchards, and to keep in Conies, Turkies, *Muscovia* Ducks, and Dughill fowl, that cannot fly over, (having one wing clipt) so it serves us for singular use, in fencing about all our Pastures, or what other ground we would enclose: For, our fences being all made of falm trees, with the ends laid cross one upon another, and many of those trees such wood, as were apt to rot and decay, by extreame moisture, and violent heat; and the Planters having found the most of them were rotten and decayed, and to make new fences of that kind impossible, by reason the timbers and trees that grew very near that place, were employed in making those fences, (for as they made them, the timber stood in their way, and no more ado but cut them down, and lay them in their places without further removing) and removes of so great trees as they were, not to be done with few and weak hands: So that they were come to a great strait, and knew not which way, nor how to renew these fences; some of the Pastures having no less than three thousand two hundred sixty eight trees to encompass them. At last, they thought upon this way, of making new fences, which is the most commodious that can be imagined. And so they gather'd all the Physick-nuts they could, and sowed them, and made large Nurseries of them, which as soon as they grew to any strength, they remov'd, and planted them so, as making a sleight hedge between the old fence and the Pasture, that Cattle might not tread them down, being young and tender, they planted them between; and in four years time they grew so strong, as they were of sufficient ability to defend themselves, and became a very sufficient fence to keep in or out the strongest Bulls in the Pasture. And then, all the wood of the old fence being dry, and fit for the Furnaces, was cut in short pieces, cleft, and sent home by the Assinigoes; and part was gathered together, and made into Charcoals, for fuel at home, and for the Smiths Forge; for we have there no Sea-coals. Besides this, there is another use of this Plant, and that is Physical: Take five of the kernels, and eat them in a morning fasting, and they are a Vomit and Purge; but the body must be strong that takes so many: three will serve a body that is easie to work on: I my self took five of them, and they gave me twelve vomits, and above twenty stools, which was too great an evacuation in a hot Countrey, where the body is weak, and the spirits exhausted by continual sweating.

But I saw a stronger man there take them before me, and they wrought moderately with him; but, finding a weaker constitution to work on, they had the more powerful operation.

This Nut, as it grows on the tree, is like a white Pear-plumb, and of a yellowish colour, with a pulp on it, as much as a Plumb; but that being taken off, there remains a stone, of a blackish colour, and within that, a kernel, and in that kernel, in the parting it in two halves, as our Hazle-nuts in *England*, will part in the middle longwise, you shall find a thin film, which looks of a faint Carnation,



which colour is easily discerned, the rest of the kernel being so perfectly white; Take out that film, and you may eat the nut safely, without any operation at all, and 'tis as sweet, as a *Jordan-Almond*. This film is perfectly discern'd, when the nut is new gathered; but I have look'd on them which have been longer kept, after I brought them into *England*, and I find the *Carnation* colour quite gone, but the kernel retains still his operation, both in *Vomit* and *Purge*.

The leaves are shap'd not much unlike a *Vine* leaf, but thrice as big, and much thicker, and fuller green.

*Poyson tree.*

The poysoned tree, though I cannot commend for her vertues, yet for her beauties I can. She is almost as large every way as the *Locust*, but not of that manner of growing; her leaves full out as large and beautiful, as the *Lawrels*, and so like, as not to be known asunder. The people that have lived long there, say, 'tis not wholsom to be under the shade of this tree. The fellers, as they cut them down, are very careful of their eyes; and those that have *Cipers*, put it over their faces; for if any of the sap fly into their eyes, they become blind for a month. A *Negro* had two *Horses* to walk, which were left with him by two *Gentlemen*; and the *Horses* beginning to fight, the *Negro* was afraid, and let them go; and they running into the wood together, struck at one another, and their heels hitting some young trees of this kind, struck the poysonous juice into one anothers eyes, and so their blindness parted the fray, and they were both led home stone blind, and continued so a month, all the hair and skin pilling off their faces. Yet, of this timber we make all, or the most part, of the *Pots* we cure our *Sugar* in; for, being sawed, and the boards dryed in the *Sun*, the poyson vapours out.

*Cassavie.*

And as this tree's poyson in her sap, so the *Mantionell's* is in her fruit, which they account as high a poyson, as that of the *Cassavie*. The fruit is like an apple *John*, and 'tis said to be one of those poysons, where-with the *Indian* *Caniballs* invenome their *Arrows*.

And now I have nam'd the *Cassavie*, 'tis fit it come in the rank of poysons, though with good ordering it makes bread. 'Tis rather a shrub than a tree, the sprigs, few of them bigger than a broom-staff, crooked and ill shap'd; but no matter for that, for the leaves are so thick as to cover them; and they grow in tufts or bunches, and ever an odd one, as, 5. 7. 9. or 11. every leaf an inch broad, and six or seven inches long; dark green, and turning backward from the fore-side. Their *Roots* I have set down already, their bigness, and manner of growth, with the use of them.

*Coloquintida.*

*Coloquintida* is as beautiful a fruit, as any you can see, of the bigness of an *Ostraches* egg; a fruit of so ill a taste, as a spoonful of the liquor mars a whole pot of pottage; the rind smooth, with various greens, interlac'd with murries, yellows, and faint *Carnations*.

*Cassia-fistula.*

Next to this shall be the *Cassia fistula*, which is a tree that will grow the most, in the least time, of any that ever I knew: I set one of the seeds, (which is but a small seed) and in a years time, it grew to be eight foot high, and as large and big in the stem, as an ordinary *Rat-toon* you walk withall: The leaf of this tree is like that of an *Ash*, but much longer, and of a darker colour; the fruit, when 'tis ripe, just of the



the colour of a black pudding, and shap'd as like, but longer. I have seen of them above 16 inches long; the pulp of it is purgative, and a great cooler of the reins.

Now because we will have all, or as many of the poysonous and Physical trees and plants together as we can, that they may not trouble another leaf, we will put in a plant amongst the trees, and that is so like a sugar Cane as hardly to be discern'd, the one from the other: and this Plant hath this quality, that whosoever chews it, and sucks in any of the juyce, will have his tongue, mouth, and throat, so swell'd as to take away the faculty of speech for two dayes, and no remedy that I know but patience.

*The poysoned Cane.*

Tamarine-trees were but newly planted in the Island, at the time I came away, and the Palm tree (so much admir'd for her two rare vertues of Oyle and Wine) was newly begun to be planted. the plant being brought us from the *East-Indies*, but the Wine she brings may rather be called a pleasant drink, than to assume the name of Wine: 'tis thus gather'd, they cut the bark in such a part of the tree, where a bottle may fitly be plac'd, and the liquor being received into this bottle, it will keep very good for a day and no longer, but is a very delicious kind of liquor.

*Tamarine.*

The poysonous trees and plants being past over: 'tis now fit to mention such as will make amends, and put our mouths in taste, but not too suddenly to fall upon the best, I will begin with the most contemptible fruits which are in the Island, the Fig tree and Cherry-tree, which have savory names, but in their natures neither useful, nor well tasted. The Fig tree being very large, but bears a small fruit, and those of so mean a condition, as I never saw any one eat of them, and the leaves not at all of the shape of our Fig leaves, nor the fifth part so large, the body of the tree I have seen as large as an ordinary Elme here in *England*.

*Fruit trees.*

*Fig-tree.*

The Cherry tree is not altogether so large, the fruit as useless and insipid: but the colour something resembling a Cherry, and the shape not much unlike; which caused the planters to call it by that name.

*Cherrytree.*

The next to these shall be fruits, rather for sauce than meat, to whet our appetites to those that follow after; and these are the Citrons, Oranges, Lemons, Lime.

The Citron is a small tree, though she bear a great fruit; and so ill matcht they are, as the fruit pulls it down to the ground, and most of the fruit touches, and bears upon the ground; the stalk of a dark colour, the leaf shap'd like that of the Lemon, but of a very dark green: these fruits we had in great abundance, when first we came there, but were all cast away, by reason we had none but Muscavado sugar, and that is not fit to preserve with; besides there were very few then that had the skill to do them.

The Orange trees do not prosper here, nor are the fruits so kindly as those of *Bermudos*: large they are and full of juice, but not so delicious as those of that Island; besides they are very full of seeds, and their rinds neither so deep, and pure an Orange Tawny, nor so thick, and therefore not so fit to preserve: the trees seldom last above seven years in their prime, and then decay.

*Orange.*

T

The



*Lemon.*

The Lemon tree is much better shap'd and larger, but this fruit is but here and there, fragling in the Island. I have seen some of the fruit large, and very full of juice, with a fragrant smell: the leaves both of these and the Orange trees, I shall not need to mention being so well known in *England*.

*Lime-tree.*

The Lime tree is like a thick Hollybush in *England*, and as full of prickles: if you make a hedge of them, about your house, 'tis sufficient proof against the *Negroes*; whose naked bodies cannot possible enter it, and it is an extraordinary sure fence against Cattle; it commonly grows seven or eight foot high, extreamly thick of leaves and fruit, and of prickles; the leaves not unlike those of a Lemon tree, the fruit so like as not to be discerned, at the distance of three yards, but only that 'tis less, but in the taste of the rind and juice, extreamly different, much fitter for sauce than the Lemon, but not so good to eat alone.

*Prickled apple.*

The Prickled apple, grows on a tree extreamly thick leav'd, and those leaves large, and of a deep green, shap'd not much unlike the leaf of a Walnut tree in *England*: this fruit is shap'd like the heart of an Oxe, and much about that bigness; a faint green on the outside, with many prickles on it, the taste very like a mustie Lemon.

*Prickled Pear.*

The next in order, shall be the prickled pear, much purer in taste and better form'd; the fruit being not unlike in shape to a Greenfield-pear, and of a faint green, intermixt with some yellow near the stalk; but the body of a mixt red, partly Crimson, partly Stammell, with prickled spots of yellow, the end of it growing somewhat larger than the middle, at which end, is a round spot of a murrey colour, the breadth of an inch, and circular with a Centre in the middle, and a small circle about it, and from that circle within, lines drawn to the utmost extent of that round Murrey spot, with faint circles between the small circle and the largest, upon that Murrey spot.

These lines and circles, of a colour no more different in lightness from the murrey, than only to be discerned, and a little yellower colour.

*Pomegranate.*

The Pomegranate is a beautiful tree the leaves small, with a green mixt with Olive colour, the blossom large, well shap'd, and of a pure Scarlet colour; the fruit not so large there, as those we have from *Spain*. The young trees being set in rows, and planted thick make a very good hedge, being clipt even a top with Garden shears. The fruit is very well known to you, and therefore I shall need say nothing of that, and these are all the remarkable fruits that grow on trees, and are proper to this Island, that I can remember, though I believe there are many more.

*Papa.*

The Papa is but a small tree, her bark of a faint willow colour, her leaves large, and of the shape of the Physick nut tree, but of the colour of her own bark, the branches grow out four or five of one height, and spread almost level, from the place where they bud out; to the ends of the branches, and about two foot higher, such other branches spreading in the same manner, and if the tree grow to a greater height than ordinary, a story or two more of these bows: the top handsomely form'd





The Prickled Pear

page . 70 .

The Blossom of  
the Pomegranate





Handwritten notes in pencil, likely describing the specimens above. The text is mostly illegible due to fading but appears to include a list of items or measurements, possibly starting with "No. 1", "No. 2", etc.



form'd to the branches, the fruit somewhat bigger than Turnips, growing close to the body of the tree, where the branches grow, and are somewhat a fainter Willow, then either the body, branches, or leaves. The tree, though it may be accounted wood, yet the softest that yet I ever saw; for, with my knife, I can cut down a tree as big as a mans leg at one chop. The fruit we boyl, and serve it up with powdred pork, as we do turnips in *England*; but the turnip is far the more savoury fruit.

The Guaver grows on a Tree, bodied and leav'd like a Cherry-tree, but the leaves somewhat larger and stiffer; the fruit of the bigness of a small Lemon, and near that colour, onely the upper end somewhat blunter than the Lemon; the rind about the thickness of the rind of a Lemon, but soft, and of a delicate taste; it holds within a pulpy substance, full of small seeds, like a fig, some of them white within, and some of a strammel colour. These seeds have this property, that when they have past through the body, wherefoever they are laid down, they grow. A Planter, and an eminent man in the Island, seeing his Daughter by chance about her natural business, call'd to her: *Plant even, Daughter, Plant even.* She answered: *If you do not like 'em, remove 'em, Father, remove 'em.* These fruits have different tastes, some rank, some sweet; so that one would give a reason of this variety, which was, according to the several constitutions they had past through, some having a milder, some a stronger savour.

*Guaver.*

This tree doth much harm in our Plantations; for the Cattle eating of them, let fall their loads every where, and so they grow in abundance, and do much harm to the Pastures, and much pains and labour is taken to destroy them. They are the best fruits preserv'd of any, the seeds being taken out, and the rind only preserved.

I have been told by some Planters in the Island, that Coco-trees grow there, and they are such men as I give credit to, but I never saw any, yet, I may venture to tell what shapes they bear, having been well acquainted with them at the Island of *St. Jago*, where there grew very many of them. They seldom are above 80 or 90 foot high, some a 100. The branches of these come out in several parts of the tree, leaving spaces between the heights; but the greatest quantity is at top, and that top alwayes stoops a little; but the Nuts grow where the lower boughs break out.

*Coco.*

These Nuts are of several sizes, the most of them as big as a large foot-ball, with a green skin without, and between that and the shell, a pulpy substance, which when it is dry, is like the rind of the Mangrove tree, of which they make roap, or (to bring the resemblance a little nearer) like hemp hurds. This Nut-shell is near half an inch thick, which we commonly cut at one end, a hole as big as a thirty shilling piece, and we find the shell full of a clear and pure tasted liquor, very delicious, but not very wholesome. This shell is lin'd within with a substance as thick as it self, a white colour, and tastes sweeter than the best *French Walnut*, and of that softness. The colour of the leaves of this tree, are like the Olive leaves.

The Custard apple grows on a tree full of branches and large leaves, and is a lively and lusty tree to look on; the fruit, when 'tis ripe,

*Custard-apple.*



ripe, as big as the largest Pomewater, but just of the colour of a Warden. When 'tis ripe, we gather it, and keep it one day, and then it is fit to be eaten. We cut a hole at the lesser end, (that it may stand the firmer in the dish) so big, as that a spoon may go in with ease, and with the spoon eat it. Never was excellent Custard more like it self, than this to it; only this addition, which makes it transcend all Custards that art can make, though of natural ingredients; and that is, a fruity taste, which makes it strange and admirable. Many seeds there are in it, but so smooth, as you may put them out of your mouth with some pleasure.

*Anchovie-Pear.*

'Twas never my luck to see any of those trees, that bear the Anchovie-Pears, nor to taste of the fruit, and therefore can give you no account of that tree; only to let you know, that there is such a tree in the Island.

*Trees of mixt kinds. Macow.*

The Macow is one of the strangest trees, the Island affords; the body and branches being stuck all over with prickles, of the finest forms that I have seen.

They are black as jet, or Ebony polish'd; the sizes, from one to seven inches long, sharp at the point, with proportionable increasings, from that part where it grows to the tree or bough, and wav'd, as I have seen some swords, from the point to the hilts, the finest natural pick-tooths that can grow. I brought a large bundle with me, but had them pickt out of my Box by the way. This tree is about the largeness of an ordinary Willow, the leaves of that colour and shape, but extremely stiff and hard.

It bears at top a large tuff of fruit, which we call Apples, but they are not a fruit to be eaten; their colour as their leaves, willow-green, and just such for shape as the Cyprus tree bears. Sure, Nature form'd this tree to some great purpose, she is so arm'd; for neither man nor beast can touch her, without being wounded. She is well shap'd, her body strait, her branches well proportion'd, her top round.

*Date tree.*

Next to this in colour are Date-trees, but the leaves somewhat longer. The shape of this tree I cannot give you, having never seen any old enough to bear the name of a tree, but sprigs rising from the root, at least ten foot high.

*Mangrove.*

The Mangrove is a tree of such note, as she must not be forgotten; for, though she be not of the tall and lusty sort of trees, yet, she is of great extent; for, there drops from her limbs a kind of Gum, which hangs together one drop after another, till it touch the ground, and then takes root, and makes an addition to the tree. So that if all these may be said to be one and the same tree, we may say, that a Mangrove tree may very well hide a troop of Horse. The bark of this tree being well ordered, will make very strong ropes, and the *Indians* make it as fine as flax, and spin it into fine thred, whereof they make Hamocks, and divers other things they wear: and I have heard, the linnen they wear is made of this bark, as also their chairs and stools.

*Calibash.*

The Calibash tree bears leaves of the fullest and richest green, of any that I know, and the greatest plenty of leaves; her fruit not for food, it is for the most part as big as that of the Coco, round as a ball, green



green as the leaves of the same tree, smooth and shining, and their manner of growing is so close to the body, and the largest of the boughs, as to touch them so, that till it be pull'd or cut off, we cannot perceive any stalk it has. Of this round ball, we make dishes, bowls and cups; for, being hollow within, as the Coco-nut, we employ them for several uses, as they are of different sizes; some for dishes, some for cups, some for basons, and some of the largest to carry water in, as we do Goards, with handles a top, as that of a kettle, for they are smoother, and much stronger than they. These look very beautifully on the tree, and to me the more beautiful, by how much they were the more strange; for, by their firm and close touching the trees, without any appearance of stalks, they seem to cleave, rather than grow to the trees.

One, and but one tree in this Island have I seen, that bears an *English* name, and that is the Bay tree, whose leaves are so aromatick, as three or four of them will amply supply the place of Cloves, Mace, and Cinamon, in dressing any dish of meat where that is required. It differs nothing in shape or colour from ours in *England*. *Bay tree.*

The Cedar is without question the most useful timber in the Island; for being strong, lasting, and not very heavy, 'tis good for building, but by reason of the smoothness and fairness of the grain, there is much of it us'd in Wainscots, Chairs, Stools, and other Utensils within doors; but, as they grow, I never saw any of them beautifully shap'd, the leaves just like those of the Ash in *England*, but somewhat bigger. *Timber trees.*

The Mastick is a tree very tall, but the body slender, and therefore Nature hath provided means to support her; for, she has spurs or brackets above seven foot from the ground, which are fixt or engrafted in the body; and some of the spurs reach out from the tree to the root, so broad, as that tables have been made of a round form, above three foot and a half diameter. Some trees have two, some three of these spurs. This tree has commonly a double top, one side being somewhat higher than the other. The fruit is like none of the rest, 'tis of a stammel colour, and has neither skin nor stone; but it is more like a Cancre than a Fruit, and is accounted unwholsom, and therefore no man tastes it: 'tis, I believe, the seed of the tree, for we see none other. The leaves of this tree grow of such a height, as till they fall down, we can give no judgment of them. The timber of this tree is rank'd amongst the fourth sort, three being better than it. I have seen the bodies of these trees near sixty foot high. *Mastick.*

The Bully tree is less than the Mastick, and bears a fruit like a Bullis in *England*; her body strait, and well shap'd, her branches proportionable, her timber excellent and lasting. *Bully.*

Redwood is a handsome tree; but not so lofty as the Mastick, excellent timber to work, for it is not so hard as some others, which is the cause they seldom break their tooles in working it, and that is the reason the work-men commend it above others. 'Tis a middling tree for size, the body about two foot and a half diameter. *Redwood.*

This is accounted as good as the Red-wood in all respects, and *Prickled is yellow-wood.*



is a strong and lasting timber, good for building, and for all uses within doors.

*Iron wood.*

Iron wood is called so, for the extream hardness; and with that hardness it has such a heaviness, as they seldom use it in building; besides, the workmen complain that it breaks all their tools. 'Tis good for any use without doors, for neither Sun nor rain can any wayes mollifie it. 'Tis much used for Coggs to the Rollers.

*Lignum vite.*

*Lignum vite* they use now and then for the same purpose, when the other is away; but having no bowling in that Countrey, little is used: They send it commonly for *England*, where we employ it to several uses; as, for making Bowles, Cabiners, Tables, and Tablemen.

*Locust.*

The Locust is a tree, not unfitly to be resembled to a Tuscan Pillar, plain, massie, and rurall, like a well limb'd labourer; for, the burden it bears being heavy and ponderous, ought to have a body proportionably built, to bear so great a weight. That rare Architect, *Pierus*, taking a pattern from Trees, to make his most exact Pillars, rejects the wreathed, vined, and figured Columns; and that *Columna Atticurgas*, mentioned by himself, to have been a squared Pillar; and those that are swell'd in the middle, as if sick of a Tympany or Dropsie; and chuses rather the straightest, most exact, and best siz'd, to bear the burthen that lyes on them. So, looking on these trees, and finding them so exactly to answer in proportion to the Tuscan Pillars, I could not but make the resemblance the other way: For, Pillars cannot be more like Trees, than these Trees are like Tuscan Pillars, as he describes them. I have seen a Locust (and not one, but many) that hath been four foot diameter in the body, near the root, and for fifty foot high has lessened so proportionably, as if it had taken pattern by the ancient Remainers, which *Philander* was so precise in measuring, which is a third part of the whole shaft upward, and is accounted as the most graceful diminution. The head to this body is so proportionable, as you cannot say, 'tis too heavy or too light; the branches large, the sprigs, leaves, and nuts so thick, as to stop all eye-sight from passing through, and so even at top, as you would think you might walk upon it, and not sink in. The nuts are for the most part three inches and a half long, and about two inches broad, and somewhat more than an inch thick; the shell somewhat thicker than a half crown piece, of a russet Umbre, or hair colour; the leaves bigger than those that grow upon the Ash in *England*: I shall not mention the timber, having given it in my Buildings. The Kernels are three or four in every nut, and between those, a kind of light pulpy substance, such as is in a Hazle-nut, before the kernel be grown to the full bigness: In times of great famine there, the poor people have eaten them for sustenance: But of all tastes, I do not like them.

*Bastard Locust.*

Another Locust there is; which they call the bastard-Locust. This looks fair, but will not last.

*Palmeto the less.*

There is a tree called the *Palmeto*, growing near the Sea-coast, which being a sandy light ground, does not afford that substance of mould, to make a large tree; nor shall you find in that low part of the Island, any considerable trees fit for building, which is a main want and hinderance to them that would build there; for, there is no means to transport



transport any from the high lands, by reason of the unpassableness of the wayes; the body of this tree I have seen about 45 or 50 foot high, the Diameter seldom above 15 or 16 inches, the rind of a pure ash colour, full of wrinkles, the leaves about two foot and a half long, in bunches, just as if you took twenty large flags, with their flat sides together, and tyed them at the broader ends. With these bunches they thatch houses, laying every bunch by himself on the lathes, somewhat to overhang one another, as tiles do. This is a very close kind of thatch, keeps dry and is very lasting, and looking up to them on the inside of the room, they are the prettiest becoming figures that I have seen of that kind, these leaves grow out no where but at the tops of the trees.

Another kind of Palmeto there is, which as it hath an addition to the name, hath likewise an addition to the nature: for I believe there is not a more Royal or Magnificent tree growing on the earth, for beauty and largeness, not to be parallell'd; and excells, so abundantly in those two properties and perfections, all the rest, as if you had ever seen her, you could not but have fallen in love with her; I'm sure I was extreamly much, and upon good and antique Authority: For if *Xerxes* strange *Lydian* love the Plantane tree, was lov'd for her age, why may not I love this for her largeness? I believe here are more women lov'd for their largeness than their age, if they have beauty for an addition, as this hath; and therefore I am resolv'd in that poynt, to go along with the multitude, who run very much that way: but how to set her out in her true shape and colour, without a Pencil, would ask a better pen than mine; yet I will deliver her dimensions as near truth as I can, and for her beauty much will arise out of that. But first I will beg leave of you to shew her in her infancy, which is about ten or twelve years old, at which time she is about seaventeen foot high, her body, and her branches, and that part which touches the ground, not unlike an Inkhorne, which I have seen turn'd in Ivory, round at the bottome, and bellied at that part which holds the Inke; and the stem or body of the tree, growing less, as that part which holds the Pens, but turn'd by a more skilful workman; and some of this body, part tawny, part purple, with Rings of white and green mixt, that go about her; and these Rings at six Inches distance. This stem, to be about six foot and a half high, upon which growes the bottome of the stalks, thin as leaves of parchment, enwrapping one another so close as to make a continued stem, of the same bigness, or two foot and a half above the other, every stone of those filmes or skins, bearing a stalk, which lessens so insensibly, from the skin to the poynt, as none but the great former of all beauty can make the like.

These stalks or branches, are of several lengths, those that are the most inward, are the highest, and every one of those stalks adorn'd with leaves, beginning a litle from the filmes to the poynt, and all these Leaves like Cylinders, sharp at either end, and biggest in the middle: that part of the stem which is the enwrappings of the filmes of a pure grass green, shining as parchment dyed green, and flickt with a flick-stone, and all the branches with the leaves, of a full grass green spreading every way, and the highest of them eight foot above

*Palmeto  
Royal.*



the green stem, the other in order to make a well shap'd Top, to so beautiful a stem. The branches sprout forth from the middle, or intrinsic part of the tree, one at once; and that wrapt up so close as 'tis rather like a Pike than a branch with leaves, and that Pike alwayes bends towards the East; but being opened by the Suns heat spreads the leaves abroad, at which time the outmost or eldest branch or sprig below withers and hangs down, and pulls with it the film that bears it, and so both it and the film which holds it up turn of a russet colour and hang down like a dead leaf, till the wind blows them off; by which time the Pike above is become a branch, with all its leaves opened; then comes forth another Pike, and then the next outmost branch and film below, falls away as the former, and so the tree grows so much higher, as that branch took room, and so a pike and a dead leaf, a pike and a dead leaf, till she be advanc'd to her full height, which will not be till 100 years be accomplished: about thirty or forty years old, she will bear fruit, but long before that time, changes her shape, her belly being lessened partly by the multiplicity of roots, she shoots down into the earth (nature foreseeing how great a weight they were to bear, and how great a stress they were to suffer, when the winds take hold of so large a head, as they were to be crown'd with) and partly by thrusting out sustenance and substance, to raise and advance the stem or body (for out of this belly which is the store-house of all this good it comes) so that now she becomes taper, with no more lessening than a well shap'd arrow, and full out as strait, her body then being of a bright Ash colour, with some dapples of green, the films a top retaining their smoothness and greenness, only a little variation in the shape, and that is a little swelling near the place that touches the stem or body, not much unlike an Urinal, so that the swelling that was in the body, is now raised up to the films or skins above. But at this age, the branches stand not so upright, as when the tree was in her minority, but has as great beauty in the stooping and declension, as she had in the rising of her branches, when her youth thrusts them forth with greater violence and vigour, and yet they had then some little stooping near the points. And now there is an addition to her beauty by two green studds, or supporters, that rise out of her sides, near the place where the films joyn to the tree, and they are about three foot long, small at the place from whence they grow, but bigger upwards, purely green, and not unlike the Iron that Glasiers use to melt their Sawder with.

One grows on one side of the tree, the other on the other side, and between these two of the same height, on either side the tree, a bush upon which the fruit grows, which are of the bigness of large *French* grapes, some green, some yellow, some purple, and when they come to be purple, they are ripe, and in a while fall down, and then the yellow becomes purple, and the green yellow; and so take their turns, till the tree gives over bearing. These fruits we can hardly come by being of so great a height, nor is it any great matter: for the taste is not pleasant; but the Hogs find them very agreeable to their palats for those that eat of them grow suddenly fat. I have seen an *Negro* with two short ropes clime the tree, and gather the fruit, about this time,





A Scale of 8 footes

The Yonge

Palmeto Royall

page .76.







time, she is 80 foot high, and continues that form, without variation; only as she grows older, so taller and larger; and has alwayes green, yellow, and purple fruit, succeeding one another; whether there be blossomes, I know not, for I never went so high as to look. This sort of trees I have seen of all sizes, from ten, to two hundred foot high; and I have been told by some of the antient Planters, that when they came first upon the Island, they have seen some of them three hundred foot high: And some reasons I have to perswade me to believe it; for, amongst those that I have seen growing, which I have guest to be two hundred foot high, the bodies of which I measured, and found to be but sixteen inches diameter. And I once found in a wood, a tree lying, which seemed to have been long fallen; for, the young wood was so grown about her, as standing at one end, I could not see the other: But, having a couple of Negros with me, that were axe-men, I caused them to cut away the wood that grew about the tree, that I might come to the other end, which I thought would never be done, she was so long, and yet a great part of her cut off, and carried away. I measured the diameter of her stem, and found it to be 25 inches.

Now if we go by the rule of Three, and say, if 16 inches diameter make 200 foot high, what shall 25 inches? And by this rule we shall prove her to be 312 foot high. But the branches of this tree were all carried away, so that I could see none of them. But I have measured a branch of one of those trees of 200 foot high, and found it 25 foot

$$\begin{array}{rcl} 16 & \text{Z} & 200 \\ 25 & & 312 \end{array}$$

$$\begin{array}{rcl} 200 & \text{Z} & 25 \\ 312 & & 39 \end{array}$$

long. So then, by the same Rule? If 200 foot high bear a branch of 25 foot long, what shall a Tree of 312 foot high do? And I see by the same Rule, it appears to be 39 foot long. And one of these trees, after she comes to bear fruit, will have no less than 20 branches at once, (but many more in her nonage) and halfe of them hold this length. I have seen a branch of one of these small tree of 200 foot high, fallen down, and blown from the tree in the falling, twenty paces off, which has made me admire from whence it should come: For the tree being of so great a height, the branches lose much of their bigness and length by their distance: But, lying on the ground, where we can take the just measure, we find what they are. And it is an admirable thing, to see the form of this sprig or branch, which is not above two inches broad where it joynes to the stem, and is lessening of the breadth from that end to the point, which is twenty five foot long, so insensible, as it is not possible to discern where the diminution is. So smooth, so even, so firme and tough, as though it were not wood, 'tis much stronger, and abler to endure the weather, or any kind of bending. The leaves that grow upon this stalk, are all of them



them (unless towards the points) two foot long, that part which touches the stalk, small, but strong enough to bear the leafe, and hath a little short stalk, to which the leafe growes, which leafe is as exactly form'd as the stalk, growing by degrees, to make two inches broad in the middle, and losing that breadth insensibly to the poynt. These leaves are thin, but tough enough to indure the strongest wind that blowes, without being broken, and not above four inches distant one from another; which multiplicity of leaves, makes the beauty of the tree the fuller. About the time this tree parts with her belly, & growes to a slender kind of shape, she drawes up amongst her roots some of the soyle that bred her, about two foot higher than the levell of ground that is near it; and by reason it is held in by an infinity of small Roots, that come from the body, it there remains firm, and falls not down; the outside of this earth is about a foot round about, broader than the Diameter of the Tree; so that if the Diameter of the Tree be a foot, the Diameter of this earth is three foot at top, but somewhat more below; for the sides are not so steep as to hold one breadth above and below. If this earth were beautiful, smooth, and large enough, it might be called the Pedestal to that Corinthian Pillar, the Palmeto Royal. But what is wanting in the Pedestal, is supplied in the dimensions of the Pillar; for, the Corinthian Pillar is allowed for length but nine of her own Diameters, and this will not aske leave to take 150. which makes her the more beautiful, since the strength she hath, is able to support the weight she bears: And for the Architrave, Frize, and Cornice, they are not to be compar'd to the beauty of the head of this Pillar, together with the fruit and supporters. And I believe, if *Vetruvius* himself had ever been where this Pillar grew, he would have chang'd all his deckings and garnishings of Pillars, according to the form of this. And though the Corinthian Pillar be a Column lasciviously deckt, like a Curtesan, and therein participating (as all inventions do) of the place where they were first born; (*Corinth* having been without controversie, one of the wantonnest Towns in the world) yet, this wants nothing of her beauty, and yet is chaste, which makes her the more admirable, and the more worthy to be prized. One thing more I have to say of this Tree, which is not only the Root that brings forth all this beauty, but the root of much admiration and wonder; that, being a tree of that height, bearing a top of so vast an extent, as from the poynt of the branches on one side, to the poynt of the stalk on the other side, to be 78 foot, upon which the winde cannot but have a main power and force, yet, I never saw any of them blown down, nor any root of this Tree bigger than a Swansquill: but there are many of them, and they fasten themselves in the Rocks, which hold them very firm. The wood of this Tree is so extream hard, and tough withall, as most of the axes that are employed to fell them, are broken in the work, and they are well enough served for cutting down such beauty. The use our Planters made of them at first coming, before they knew how to make shingles, was, to saw the bodies of these trees to such length, as might reach to the ridge pole, to the Eves of the house; for they were hollow, and then sawing them long wise, there were two concaves, which they laid together, setting the hollow sides up-



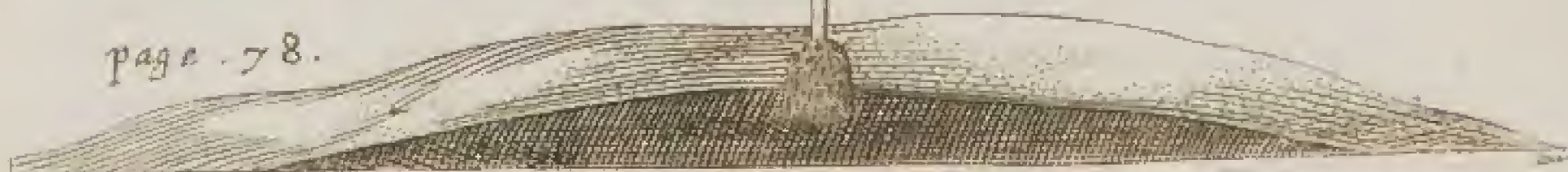
The Olde

Palmeto Royall

This plant here exprest is of the  
but a foot in diametre, and the height  
his owne diametre; But there have  
the Iland, which have bin two foot  
150 tymes theyr owne diametre,

least Magnitude being  
som what less then 100 tymes  
bin some growing upon  
diametre, and have bin  
which is 300 foot high.

A scale of 30 feet







Sketch of a tree

Sketch of a tree  
The trunk is thick and curved  
The canopy is rounded and dense  
The branches are numerous and small

Sketch of a tree  
The trunk is thick and curved  
The canopy is rounded and dense  
The branches are numerous and small





upward ; and where they close, one to cover them, with the hollow side downward, and so the whole house over. And this was the use they made of the bodies of these Trees, for which, very many of them were destroyed.

But, I doubt, I have tir'd you with naming so many Trees, and therefore I will give over ; but with this rule, that which way soever I have travelled ( from the place I dwelt ) either East, West, North, or South, ( but four miles distant ) I have still found trees, such as I had never seen before, and not one of those I have named, and many of them extreamly large and beautiful. And the nearer the middle of the Island, the larger the trees, and the leaves ; so that from trees of a hundred foot high, to a diminution of twenty ; and from leaves of eighteen inches long, with a proportionable breadth to that length, to the small ones of half an inch, which most of the trees bear that are near the Bridge, and, I think, near the Sea, every where you shall find many, and the most such. And the reason I have given before ; the land in the highest part of the Island being very rich mould, and that near the Sea being a sandy light earth. And in the partings or twists of the branches of those trees, ( which I have not named ) such excrescences grow out, as are strange for their formes, and no doubt medicinable in their natures ; such as is our *Mistletoe*, or *Polypodium*, and much larger, and more frequent ; but we want skilfull men to find out their virtues.

There are ( besides the Bay-leaves, which, as I told you, might serve for Cloves, Mace, and Cinamon ) two sorts of Spices, Ginger, and red-Pepper : The Ginger being a root which brings forth blades, not unlike in shape to the blades of Wheat, but broader and thicker, for they cover the ground so, as you cannot see any part of it. They are of a Popinjay colour, the blossome a pure Scarlet. When 'tis ripe, we dig up the roots, ( cutting off the blades ) and put them into the hands of an Overseer, who sets many of the young Negroes to scrape them with little knives, or small Iron spuds, ground to an edge. They are to scrape all the outward skin off, to kill the spirit ; for, without that, it will perpetually grow. Those that have Ginger, and not hands to dress it thus, are compelled to scald it, to kill the spirit ; and that Ginger is nothing so good as the other, for it will be hard as wood, and black, whereas the scrapt Ginger is white and soft, and hath a cleaner and quicker taste.

There is of this kind two sorts ; the one so like a childs Coral, as not to be discerned at the distance of two paces ; a crimson and scarlet mixt, the fruit about two inches long, and shines more than the best polish'd Coral. The other of the same colour, and glistering as much, but shap't like a large Button of a Cloak ; both of one and the same quality ; both so violently strong, as when we break but the skin, it sends out such a vapour into our Lungs, as we fall all a Coughing, which lasts a quarter of an hour after the fruit is removed ; but, as long as we are garbling it, we never give over. This Spice the Spaniards love, and will have it in all their meat, that they intend to have p'cant, for a greater *Hough goe* is not in the world. Garlick is faint and cool to it. It growes on a little shrub, no bigger than a Goosberry bush.

Plants that  
bear fruit.  
Ginger.

Red Pepper.

Having



Cucumber.

Having inflam'd this leafe with a burning heat, it is fit to apply a Cooler, lest it fall on fire; and that is such a one, as is cold in the third degree, a Cucumber; of which kind we have excellent good, from the beginning of *November*, to the end of *February*; but after that, the weather growes too hot. They serve as Sallets cold, with Oyle, Vinegar, and Pepper; and hot, being stewed, or fryed, of which we make Sawce for Mutton, Pork, Turkeys, or Muscovia Ducks. Geese I never saw but two in the Island, and those were at the Governours house.

Mellons.

Millons we have likewise for those four months; but before or after, the weather is too hot. They are for the most part larger than here in *England*. I have seen them cut four inches thick; they eat moi-ster then here they do, which makes them the less wholesome. We take no other care (after the seeds are put into the ground) but to weed them. I have seen of them sixteen inches long.

Water-Mil-  
lon.

The Water-Millon there, is one of the goodliest fruits that growes. I have seen of them, big as a Cloakbag, vvith a suit of cloaths in it; purely green, engrayld with straw colour; And so wanton Nature is, in disposing those figures, as though they be upon all parts of the fruit; yet, they vary and flow so infinitely, and no inch of square or circle is to be found upon the rinde, that is like one another, and the whole rinde as smooth as polisht glass. Where they put out upon the ground, there they lie; for the Vine they grow by, has not strength to remove them. This fruit within is not unlike an Apple for colour; but for taste, not like any fruit I know in *England*, waterish, and wallowish; yet the people there eat strange quantities of it, two or three pieces, big, as if cut round about a twelve-penny loafe, an inch thick. They hold it rarely cooling to the body, and excellent for the stone. The seeds are of themselves so strong a Purple, as to dye that part of the fruit it touches, of the same colour; and till they do so, the fruit is not full ripe: They account the largest best. Extreemly full of seeds they are, which in the eating slip out with such ease, as they are not at all troublesome.

Grapes.

Grapes we have in the Island, and they are indifferently well tasted, but they are never ripe together; some may be pickt out to make Wine, but it will be so small a quantity, as it will not be worth the while. There is alwaies some green, some ripe, some rotten grapes in the bunch.

Plantine.

Though the Plantine bear not the most delicious fruit that growes on this Island; yet, for that she is of great use, and beauty too, and for many other rarities that she excels other Plants in, I shall endeavour to do her right in my description. And first, for the manner of planting; we put a root into the ground, six inches deep, and in a very short time, there will come forth three or four sprouts, whereof one has the precedence, and holds that advantage, (as the prime Hawke does in an Ayery.) And as this sprout growes, it springs from the intrinsic part of the stem, and the out-leaves hang down and rot; but still new ones come within, as rise up as the Palmeto does, like a pike, which opened with the Sun, becomes a leafe; and about the time it comes to be eight or ten foot high, the pikes, (and consequently the





A Scale of 8 foote

The Plantine

Blossomd

page 80





Study of the Mount V.





the leaves) will be of their full bigness, and so ( as others grow ) continue that bigness, till the last sprout come forth ; which is the soul of the Plant, and will never be a leaf, but is the stem upon which the fruit must grow. About the time the leaves come to their full bigness, they rot no more, but continue in their full beauty ; a rich green, with stripes of yellow so intermixt, as hardly to be discerned where they are. These leaves are the most of them above six foot long, and two foot broad ; smooth, shining, and stiffe as a Lawrel leaf ; and from the middle of the leaf to the end, such a fall, as a father has, in a well shap't plume. But, as all these leaves come out in a pike, so that pike ever bends a little towards the East, though as soon as it becomes a leaf, chooseth any point of the Compass to lean to ; and so in a due proportion hangs round about the stem. At the time it comes to be of the full height, the uppermost leaves will be fifteen or sixteen foot high, and then you shall perceive the stem upon which the fruit must grow, more than a foot higher than the rest, with a green bunch at top ; which bunch has such a weight, as to make it stoop by degrees, till it be but seven foot from the ground ; and then the green leaves which held the blossome in, open, and shew the blossome it self, which is of a pure purple, and as big as the heart of a Stag, and of that shape, with the point downwards, and so continues, without opening the leaves, till it be ready to fall off ; and when it falls, pulls with it above a foot of the stalk that held it, which is covered with yellow blossomes. This purple blossome, when it fell, I guess to be a pound weight, besides the stalk it took along with it. After this is fallen, the fruit grows out from that end which remained ; and as it growes, turnes up towards the stalk that bears it, much like a Grapple that holds the long-Boat of a Ship ; or, as a dozen large fish-hooks tied together, turning up several waies ; each turning up of that fruit being seven or eight inches long, and as big as a large Battoon you walk with. In six months, this Plant will be grown, and this fruit ripe, which is a pleasant, wholesome, and nourishing fruit, yellow, when 'tis ripe : But the Negroes chuse to have it green, for they eat it boyl'd, and it is the only food they live upon. Our manner of eating it, is, when it is full ripe, take off the skin, which will come off with much ease, and then the fruit looks yellow, with a froth upon it, but the fruit firme. When it is gathered, we cut down the Plant, and give it to the Hoggs, for it will never bear more. The body of this plant is soft, skin within skin, like an Onyon, and between the skins, water issues forth as you cut it. In three months, another sprout will come to bear, and so another, and another, for ever ; for we never plant twice. Groves we make of these plants, of twenty acres of ground, and plant them at such distances, and in such rows, as you do Cherry-trees in *Kent*, so that we walk under the leaves, as under the Arches in *St. Faith's Church* under *St. Pauls*, free from sun and rain.

The wilde Plantine grows much as the others does, but the leaves not so broad, and more upright, the fruit not to be eaten ; of a scarlet colour, and almost three square. I know no use of this fruit or leaves, but to look on.

*Wild Plantine.*

The Bonano differs nothing from the Plantine in the body and  
Y leaves,

*Bonano.*



leaves, but only this, that the leaves are somewhat less, and the bodie has here and there some blackish spots, the blossome no bigger then a large bud of a Rose; of a faint purple, and Ash-colour mixt, the stalk that bears it, adorn'd with small blossomes, of several colours; when they fall off, there comes out the fruit, which does not turn back as the Plantines do, but stand outright like a bunch of puddings, all neer of a length, and each of them between four and five inches long. This fruit is of a sweeter taste then the Plantine; and for that reason the *Negroes* will not meddle with them, nor with any fruit that has a sweet taste; but we find them as good to stew, or preserve, as the Plantine, and will look and taste more like Quince. This tree wants little of the beauty of the Plantine, as she appears upon the ground, in her full growth; and though her fruit be not so useful a food for the belly, as that of the Plantine, yet she has somewhat to delight the eyes, which the other wants, and that is the picture of Christ upon the Cross; so lively exprest, as no Limner can do it (with one colour) more exactly; and this is seen, when you cut the fruit just cross as you do the root of Ferne, to find a spread Eagle: but this is much more perfect, the head hanging down, the armes extended to the full length, with some little elevation; and the feet cross one upon another.

This I will speak as an Artist; let a very excellent Limner, paint a Crucifix, only with one colour, in limning; and let his touches be as sharp, and as masterly as he pleases, the figure no bigger then this which is about an inch long, and remove that picture at such a distance from the eye, as to lose some of the Curiosity, and dainty touches of the work, so as the outmost stels, or profile of the figure may be perfectly discern'd, and at such a distance; the figure in the fruit of the Bonano, shall seem as perfect as it: much may be said upon this subject by better wits, and abler souls then mine: My contemplation being only this, that since those men dwelling in that place professing the names of Christians, and denying to preach to those poor ignorant harmless souls the *Negroes*, the doctrine of Christ Crucified, which might convert many of them to his worship, he himself has set up his own Cross, to reproach these men, who rather then they will lose the hold they have of them as slaves, will deny them the benefit and blessing of being Christians. Otherwise, why is this figure set up for these to look on, that never heard of Christ, and God never made any thing useles, or in vain.

*Pine.*

Now to close up all that can be said of fruits, I must name the Pine, for in that single name, all that is excellent in a superlative degree, for beauty and taste, is totally and summarily included: and if it were here to speak for it self, it would save me much labour, and do it self much right. 'Tis true, that it takes up double the time the Plantine does, in bringing forth the fruit; for 'tis a full year before it be ripe; but when it comes to be eaten, nothing of rare taste can be thought on that is not there; nor is it imaginable, that so full a Harmony of tastes can be raised out of so many parts, and all distinguishable. But before I come to say any thing of that, I will give you some little hints of her shape and manner of growth, which though I must acknowledge





*The Blossom*

*A scale of 8 feet*

*The Bonano with*

*the fruit ripe*



1871  
1872  
1873  
1874  
1875  
1876  
1877  
1878  
1879  
1880  
1881  
1882  
1883  
1884  
1885  
1886  
1887  
1888  
1889  
1890  
1891  
1892  
1893  
1894  
1895  
1896  
1897  
1898  
1899  
1900



1871

1872



ledg my self to be down-right lame, in the expression ; yet rather then you shall lose all, I will indeavour to represent some of her beauties, in such faint expressions as I have. A Slip taken from the body of this plant, and set in the ground, will not presently take root, but the Crown that growes upon the fruit it self will sooner come to perfection then it ; and will have much more beauty all the time of growing. In a quarter of a year, it will be a foot high, and then the leaves will be about 7 or 8 inches long, which appear to your eyes like Semi-Circles: the middle being a little hollow, so as I have seen a french sword, that is made for lightness and strength. The colour for the most part, frost upon green, intermixt with Carnation, and upon edges of the leaves, teeth like those upon Sawes, and these are pure incarnadine. The leaves fall over one another, as they are plac'd higher on the stem ; the points of the lowest, touching the ground ; in a quarter of a year more, you shall perceive on the top of the stem a Blossome, as large as the largest Carnation, but of different colours, very small flakes, Carnation, Crimson and Scarlet intermixt, some yellow, some blew leaves, and some Peach Colour, intermixt with purple, Sky colour, and Orange tawny, Gridaline, and Gingeline, white and Philyamort. So that the Blossome may be said to represent many of the varieties to the sight, which the fruit does to the taste, these colours will continue a week or ten dayes, and then wither and fall away, under which there will appear a little bunch of the bigness of a Walnut which has in it all these colours mixt, which in the blossom were disperst ; and so grows bigger for two months more, before it shews the perfect shape, which is somewhat of an Oval form, but blunt at either end ; and at the upper end, growes out a Crown of leaves, much like those below for colour, but more beautiful ; some of the leaves of this Crown, six inches long ; the out leaves, shorter by degrees. This fruit is inclos'd with a rind, which begins with a screw at the stalk, and so it goes round till it comes to the top or Crown, gently rising, which screw is about  $\frac{1}{4}$  of an inch broad ; and the figures that are imbroydred upon that screw neer of that dimension, and divisions between. And it falls out so, as those divisions are never over one another in the screw, but are alwayes under the middle of the figures above, those figures do vary so in the colouring, as if you see an hundred Pines they are not one like another, and every one of those figures has a little tuft or beard, some of green, some yellow, some Ash colour, some Carnation : There are two sorts of pines, the King and Queen Pine : The Queen is far more delicate, and has her colours of all greens, with their shadowes intermixt, with faint Carnations, but most of all frost upon green, and Sea greens. The King Pine, has, for the most part, all sorts of yellows, with their shadowes intermixt with grass greens, and is commonly the larger Pine. I have seen some of them 14 inches long, and six inches in the diametre ; they never grow to be above four foot high, but the most of them having heavy bodies, and slender stalks, lean down and rest upon the ground. Some there are, that stand upright, and have coming out of the stem, below, some sprouts of their own kind, that bear fruits which jett out from the stem a little, and then rise upright, I



have seen a dozen of these round about the prime fruit, but not so high as the bottom of that, and the whole Plant together, shews like a Father in the middle, and a dozen Children round about him; and all those will take their turnes to be ripe, and all very good. When this fruit is grown to a ripeness, you shall perceive it by the smell, which is as far beyond the smell of our choicest fruits of *Europe*, as the taste is beyond theirs. When we gather them, we leave some of the stalk to take hold by; and when we come to eat them, we first cut off the crowne, and send that out to be planted; and then with a knife, pare off the rinde, which is so beautiful, as it grieves us to rob the fruit of such an ornament; nor would we do it, but to enjoy the precious substance it contains; like a Thief, that breakes a beautiful Cabinet, which we would forbear to do, but for the treasure he expects to find within. The rinde being taken off, we lay the fruit in a dish, and cut it in slices, half an inch thick; and as the knife goes in, there issues out of the pores of the fruit, a liquor, cleer as Rock-water, neer about six spoonfulls, which is eaten with a spoon; and as you taste it, you find it in a high degree delicious, but so milde, as you can distinguish no taste at all; but when you bite a piece of the fruit, it is so violently sharp, as you would think it would fetch all the skin off your mouth; but, before your tongue have made a second trial upon your palate, you shall perceive such a sweetness to follow, as perfectly to cure that vigorous sharpness; and betwene these two extreames, of sharp and sweet, lies the relish and flavor of all fruits that are excellent; and those tastes will change and flow so fast upon your palate, as your fancy can hardly keep way with them, to distinguish the one from the other: and this at least to a tenth examination, for so long the Eccho will last. This fruit within, is neer of the colour of an *Abricot* not full ripe, and eates crispe and short as that does; but it is full of pores, and those of such formes and colours, as 'tis a very beautiful sight to look on, and it vites the appetite beyond measure. Of this fruit you may eat plentifully, without any danger of surfeiting. I have had many thoughts which way this fruit might be brought into *England*, but cannot satisfie my self in any; preserv'd it cannot be, whole; for, the rinde is so firm and tough, as no Sugar can enter in; and if you divide it in peices, (the fruit being full of pores) all the pure taste will boyle out. 'Tis true, that the *Dutch* preserve them at *Fernambock*, and send them home; but they are such as are young, and their rinde soft and tender: But those never came to their full taste, nor can we know by the taste of them, what the others are. From the *Bermudoes*, some have been brought hither in their full ripeness and perfection, where there has been a quick passage, and the fruites taken in the nick of time; but, that happens very seldom. But, that they should be brought from the *Barbadoes*, is impossible, by reason of the several Climates between. We brought in the ship seventeen of several growths, but all rotten, before we came halfe the way.

Sugar  
Canes, with  
the manner  
of planting;  
of their  
growth, time  
of ripeness,  
with the  
whole process  
of Sugar-  
making.

Though I have said as much as is fit, and no more then truth, of the beauty and taste of these formentioned Trees and Plants, beyond which, the Sun with his masculine force cannot beget, nor the teeming Earth bear; all which are proper and peculiar to the Island; for they



*The Queen Pine.*



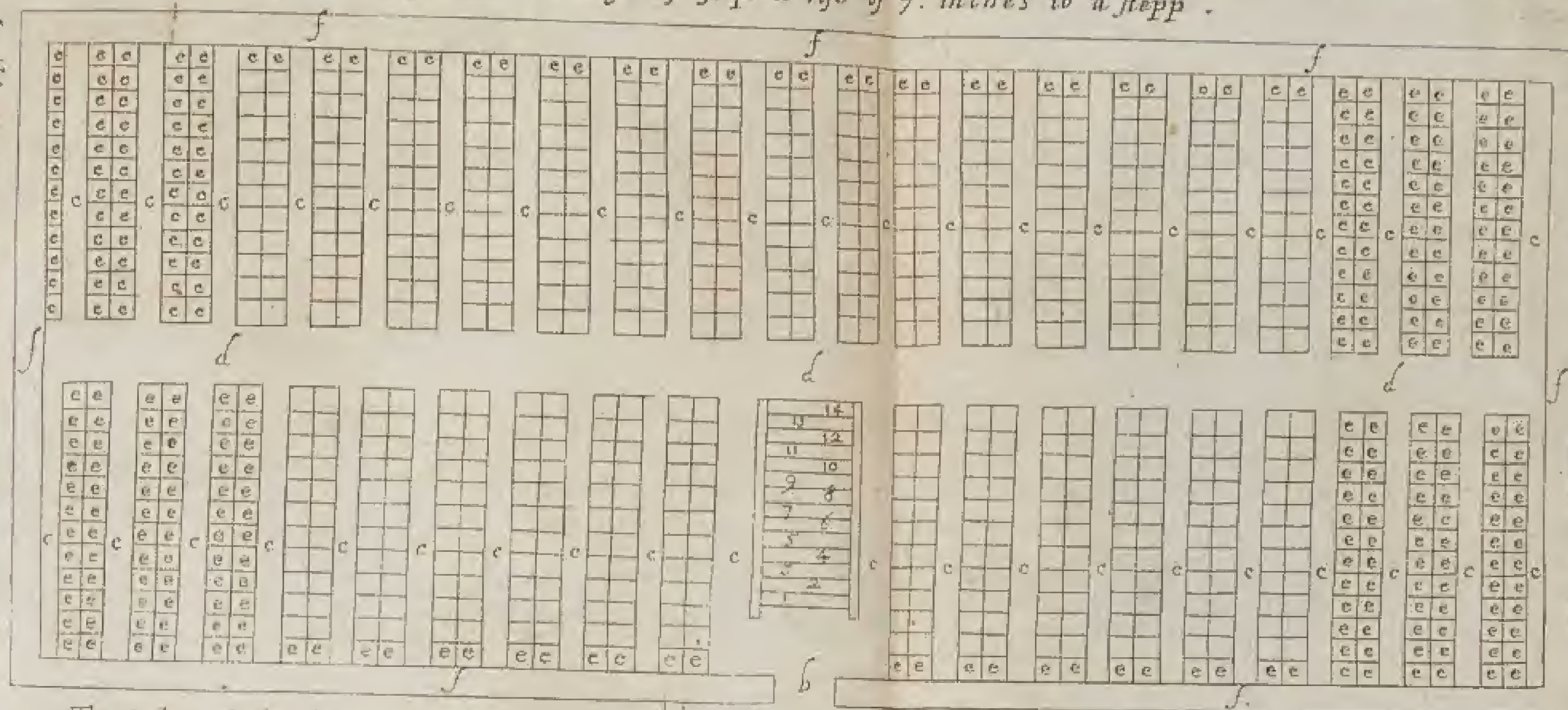






The first storie of the Curing house where the potts stand which hold the Sugar and is 8. foote 2 inches from the ground having 14. steps to rise of 7. inches to a stepp.

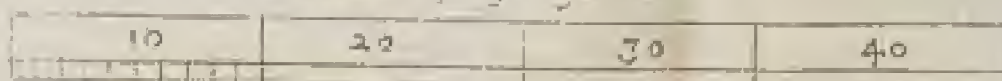
In this storie is 94 potts and they use to burn another storie above this which will hold above 600. potts more



The Index of the Curing house.

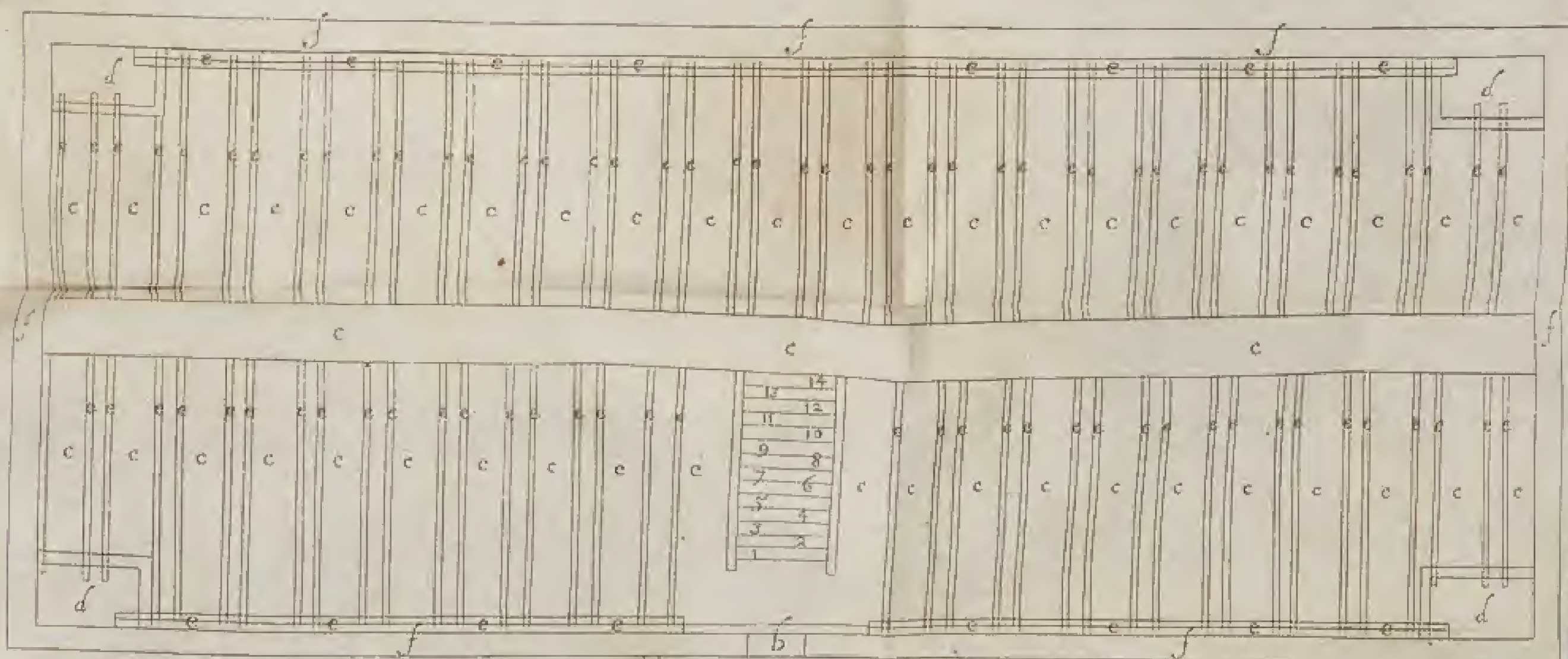
- a. the room where they knock out the sugar when it is cured, or made into whites, and is called the knocking room; when they knock it out for muscovados, they finde the middle of the pott well coloured, but the upper and nether parts, of a browner colour the topp frothy and light, the bottom verie browne and full of Molasses, both which they set aside to be boyled againe with the Molasses in the Cisterns of which they make Penneles, which though it be a worse kinde of sugar in the spending yet you will hardly know it from the second sort of Muscovee sugar
- b. the two dores

a Scale of 70. foote



- c. the passages betweene the potts upon the floor above
- d. the great passage in the middle of the room from end to end
- e. the topps of the potts which are 16. inches square and hang betweene stantions of timber borne up by verie strong and Massey studs or posts, and girded or bract together with Iron plates or wood, the length of the potts are 26. or 28. inches long made taper downward, and hold about 30. pound of sugar.
- f. the walls of the room which is 100. foot long and 40. foot broad within, they have some tymes a storie of potts above this.

The ground room of the Curing house of the place where the gutters by w. convey<sup>ch</sup> Molasses to y<sup>e</sup> Cisterns

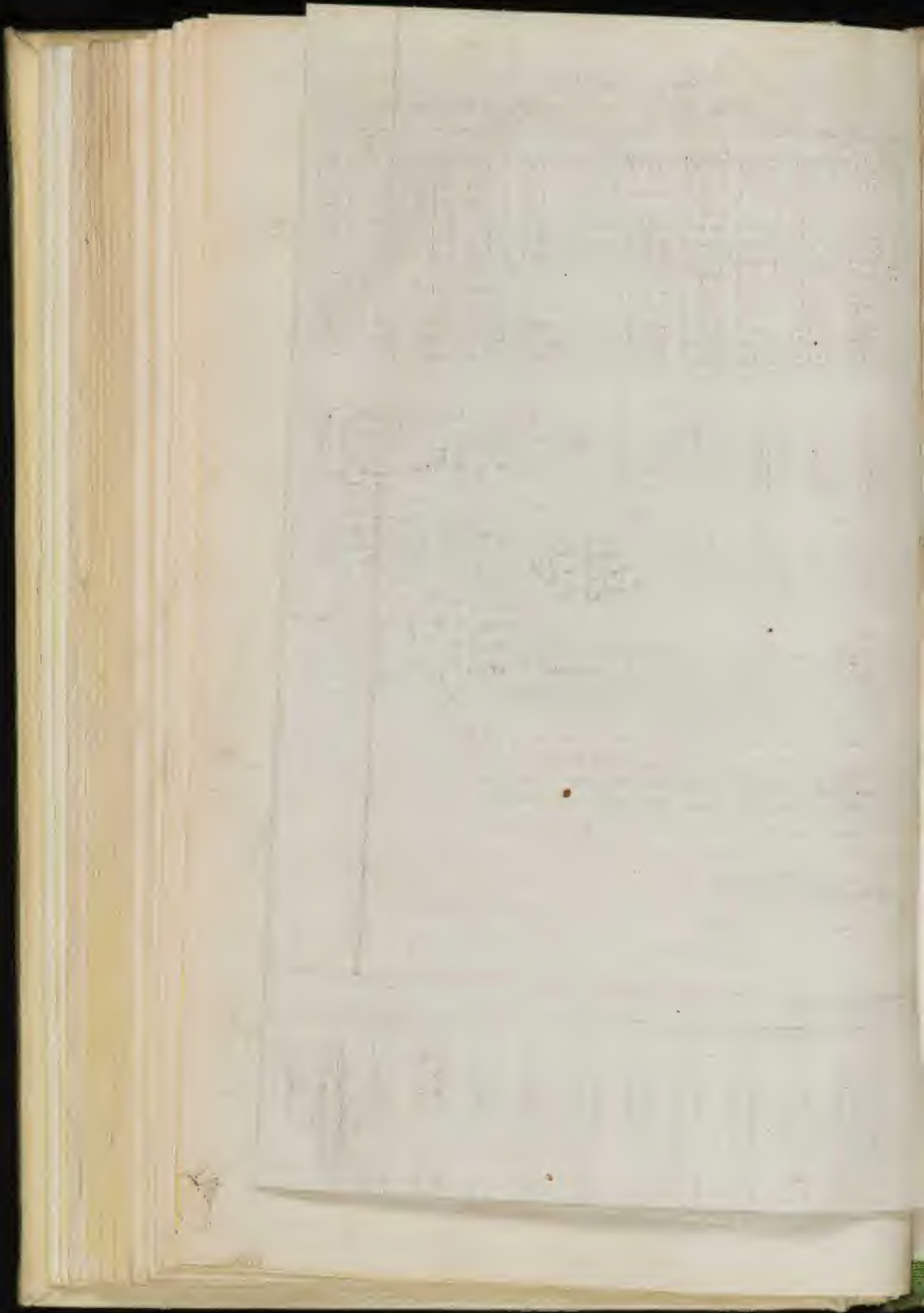


The Index to the ground room.

- a. the knocking room.
- b. the dores
- c. the vacuities betweene the gutters
- d. the Cisterns of which there are 4. which hold the Molasses till they boyle it which comonly they doe one day in a weeke.

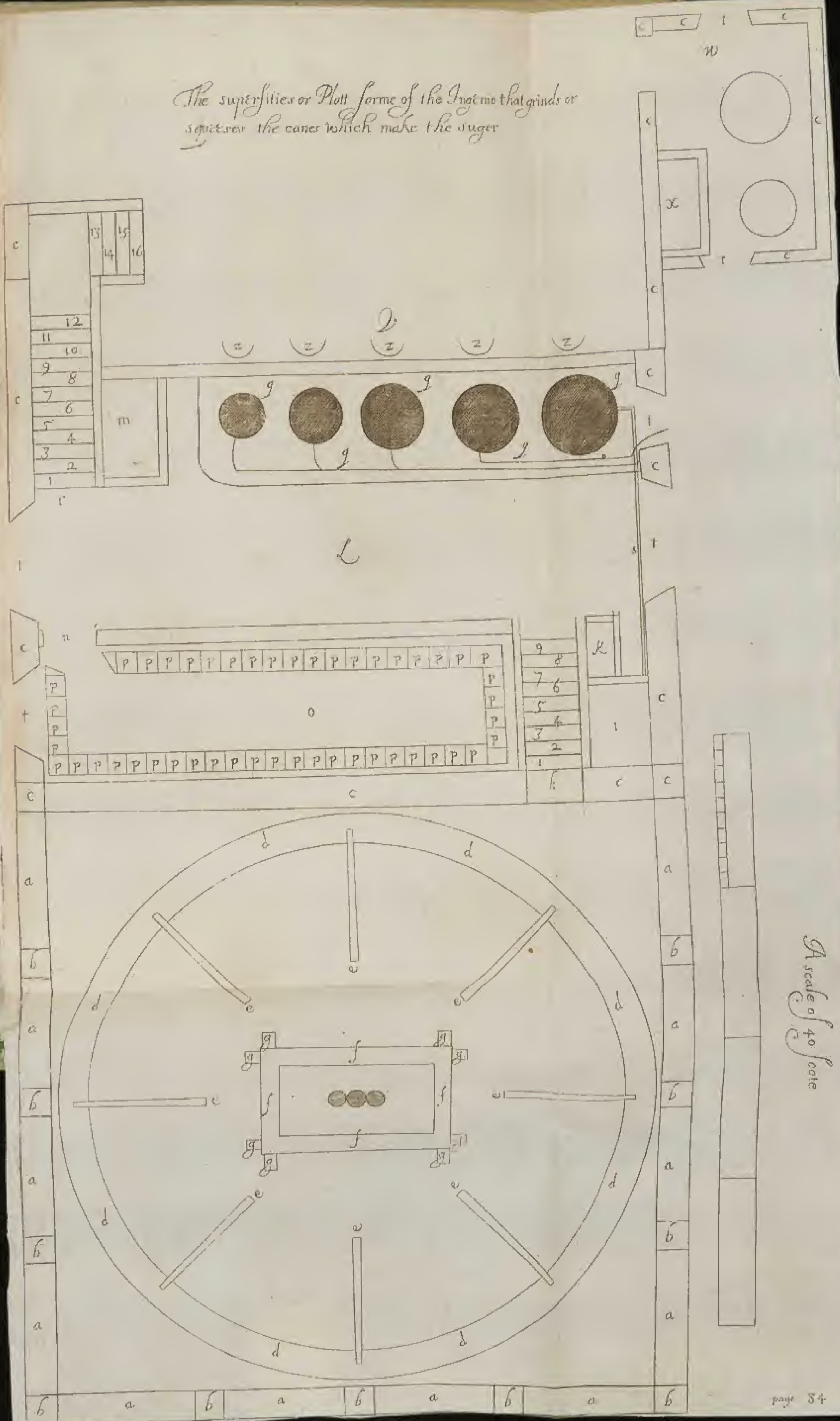
- e. all the gutters that convey the Molasses downe to the Cisterns.
- f. the walls of the room which are to be accounted two foot thick, there are seldome any windows in the Curing house, for the moyst ayer is an enemy to the cure of the sugar rather bring pannes of well kindled coales into the room especially in moyst and rainy wether.





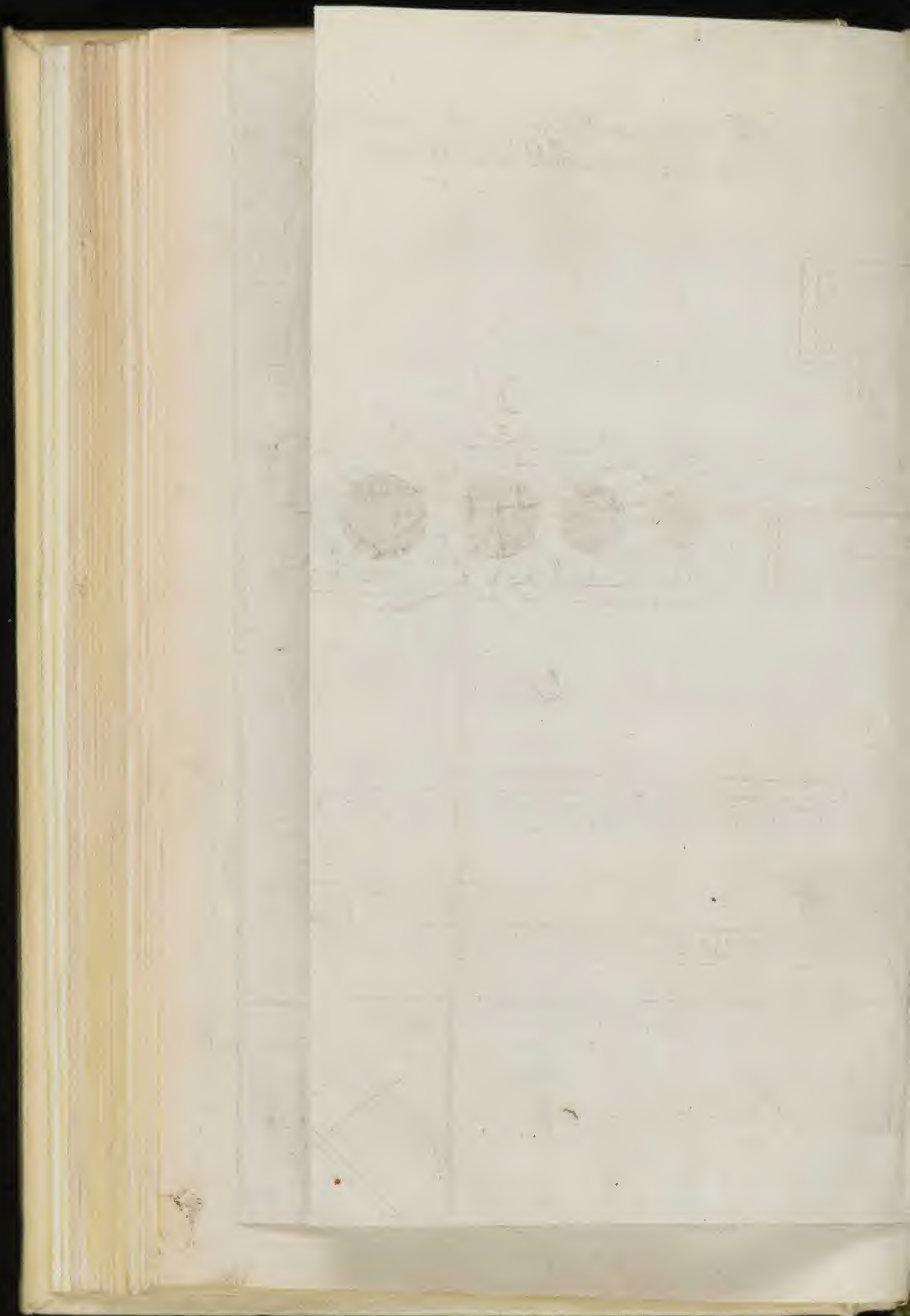


The superficies or Platt forme of the Ingenio that grinds or  
squeezes the canes which make the sugar



A scale of 40 feet







The upright of the Ingenio or Mill that squeezes or grinds the Sugar Canes

a. the foundation or plates of the house which must be of massey and lasting timber

b. the frame of the Ingenio

c. the planks that beare up the Rollers

d. the supporter or propp that beares upp those planks

e. the Rollers themselves

f. the shaft that is grafted into the middle roller which turnes both the other

g. the sweepes that come over all y<sup>e</sup> worke and reach to y<sup>e</sup> Circle where the horses and Cattle draw.

h. the Brackets that keepe the frame from shaking whereof there must be 8.

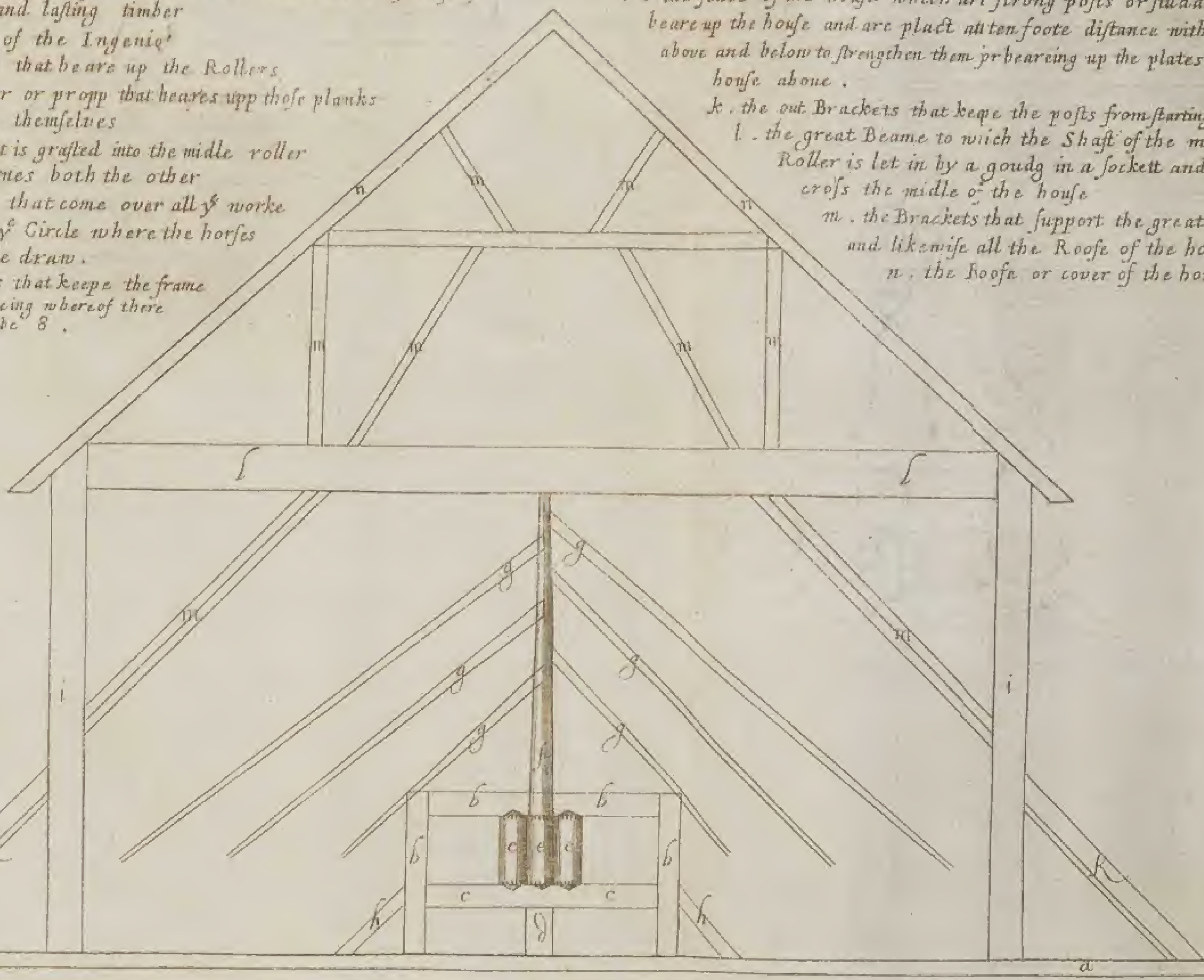
i. the sides of the house which are strong posts or studs which beare up the house and are plac'd at ten foote distance with Brackets above and below to strengthen them for beareing up the plates of the house above.

k. the out Brackets that keepe the posts from starting or buckling

l. the great Beame to which the Shaft of the middle Roller is let in by a goudg in a socket and goes cross the middle of the house

m. the Brackets that support the great beame and likewise all the Roofs of the house

n. the Roofs or cover of the house.

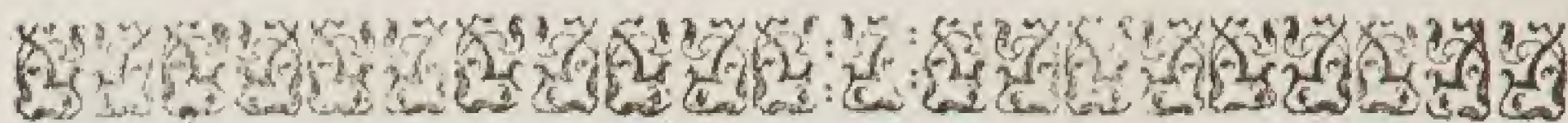


A scale of 40. foote









*An Index to the Platforme or Superficies of an Ingenio,  
that grinds or squeezes the Sugar.*

- A** The ground-plat, upon which the Posts or Pillars stand, that bear up the house, or the Intercolumniation between those Pillars.
- B** The Pillars or Posts themselves.
- C** The wall between the Mill-house and Boyling-house.
- D** The Circle or Circumference, where the Horses and Cattle go, which draw the Rollers about.
- E** The Sweeps, to which the Horses and Cattle are fastened, that draw about the Rollers.
- F** The Frame of the *Ingenio*.
- G** The Brackets or Butteresses, that support that Frame.
- H** The Dore, that goes down stairs to the Boyling-house.
- I** The Cistern, into which the Liquor runs from the Ingenio, immediately after it is ground, and is carried in a Pipe under ground to this Cistern, where it remains not above a day at most.
- K** The Cistern that holds the Temper, which is a Liquor made with ashes, steeped in water, and is no other than the Lye we wash withall in *England*. This temper, we straw in the three last Coppers, as the Sugar boyles, without which, it would never Corn, or be any thing but a Syrope; but the salt and tartarousness of this Temper, causes it to turn, as Milk does, when any soure or sharp liquor is put into it; and a very small quantity does the work.
- L** The Boyling-house.  
The five black Rounds are the Coppers, in which the Sugar is boyled, of which the largest is called the clarifying Copper, and the least, the Tatch.
- M** The cooling Cistern, which the Sugar is put into, presently after it is taken off the fire, and there kept till it be Milk-warm; and then it is to be put into Pots made of boards, sixteen inches square above, and so grow taper to a point downward; the Pot is commonly about thirty inches long, and will hold thirty or thirty five pounds of Sugar.
- N** The Dore of the Filling-room.
- O** The Room it self, into which the Pots are set, being fill'd, till the Sugar grow cold and hard, which will be in two dayes & two nights, & then they are carried away to the Cureing house.
- P** The tops of the Pots, of sixteen inches square, and stand between two stantions of timber, which are girded together in several places, with wood or Iron, and are thirteen or fourteen inches assunder; so that the tops of the Pots being sixteen inches, cannot slip between, but are held up four foot from the ground.
- Q** The Frame where the Coppers stand, which is raised above the flowre or level of the room, about a foot and a half, and is made of Dutch Bricks, which they call Klinkers, and plaister of *Paris*. And besides the Coppers, there are made small Gutters, which convey the skimmings of the three lesser Coppers, down to the Still-house, whereof the strong Spirit is made, which they call *kill-devil*, and the skimmings of the two greater Coppers are conveyed another way, as worthless and good for nothing.
- R** The Dore that goes down the stairs to the fire-room, where the Furnaces are, which cause the Coppers to boyl; and though they cannot be exprest here, by reason they are under the Coppers; yet, I have made small semi-circles, to let you see where they are, behind the partition-wall, which divides the fire-room from the boyling-house; which wall goes to the top of the house, and is mark'd with the Letter (c) as the other walls are.
- S** A little Gutter made in the wall, from the Cistern that holds the first Liquor, to the clarifying Copper, and from thence is conveyed to the other Coppers, with Ladles that hold a gallon a piece, by the hands of Negres that attend that work day and night, shifting both Negres and Cattle every four hours, who also convey the skimmings of the three lesser Coppers down to the Stillhouse, there to be twice distill'd; the first time it comes over the helme, it is but small, and is called Low-wines; but the second time, it comes off the strongest Spirit or Liquor that is potable.
- T** All Windowes.
- U** The Fire-room, where the Furnaces are, that make the Coppers boyl.
- W** The Still-house.
- X** The Cistern that holds the skimmings, till it begin to be soure, till when, it will not come over the helme.
- Y** The two Stills in the Still-house.
- Z** The Semi-circles, that shew where about the Furnaces stand.







they were planted there by the great Gardiner of the World. Yet, there is one brought thither as a stranger, from beyond the Line, which has a property beyond them all; and that is the Sugar-Cane, which though it has but one single taste, yet, that full sweetness has such a benign faculty, as to preserve all the rest from corruption; which, without it, would taint and become rotten; and not only the fruits of this Island, but of the world, which is a special preheminance due to this Plant, above all others, that the earth or world can boast of. And that I may the more fully and amply set her off, I will give you all the observations I made, from my first arrival on the Island, when planting there, was but in its infancy, and but faintly understood, to the time I left the place, when it was grown to a high perfection.

At the time we landed on this Island, which was in the beginning of September, 1647. we were informed, partly by those Planters we found there, and partly by our own observations, that the great work of Sugar-making, was but newly practised by the inhabitants there. Some of the most industrious men, having gotten Plants from *Fernambock*, a place in *Brasil*, and made tryal of them at the *Barbadoes*; and finding them to grow, they planted more and more, as they grew and multiplied on the place, till they had such a considerable number, as they were worth the while to set up a very small Ingenio, and so make tryal what Sugar could be made upon that soyl. But, the secrets of the work being not well understood, the Sugars they made were very inconsiderable, and little worth, for two or three years. But they finding their errors by their daily practice, began a little to mend; and, by new directions from *Brasil*, sometimes by strangers, and now and then by their own people, (who being covetous of the knowledge of a thing, vvhich so much concerned them in their particulars, and for the general good of the vvhole Island) vvere content sometimes to make a voyage thither, to improve their knowvledge in a thing they so much desired. Being now made much abler to make their queries, of the secrets of that mystery, by how much their often failings, had put them to often stops and nonplusses in the work. And so returning with most Plants, and better Knowledge, they went on upon fresh hopes, but still short, of what they should be more skilful in: for, at our arrival there, we found them ignorant in three main points, that much conduced to the work; *viz.* The manner of Planting, the time of Gathering, and the right placing of their Coppers in their Furnaces; as also, the true way of covering their Rollers, with plates or Bars of Iron: All which being rightly done, advance much in the performance of the main work. At the time of our arrival there, we found many Sugar-works set up, and at work; but yet the Sugars they made, were but bare Muscavadoes, and few of them Merchantable commodities; so moist, and full of molosses, and so ill cur'd, as they were hardly vvorth the bringing home for *England*. But about the time I left the Island, which was in 1650. they were much better'd; for then they had the skill to know when the Canes vvere ripe, vvhich vvas not, till they vvere fifteen months old; and before, they gathered them at twelve, vvhich vvas a main disadvantage to the making



king good Sugar; for, the liquor wanting of the sweetness it ought to have, caused the Sugars to be lean, and unfit to keep. Besides, they were grown greater proficient, both in boyling and curing them, and had learnt the knowledge of making them white, such as you call Lump Sugars here in *England*; but not so excellent as those they make in *Brasil*, nor is there any likelyhood they can ever make such: the land there being better, and lying in a Continent, must needs have constanter and steadier weather, and the Aire much drier and purer, than it can be in so small an Island, and that of *Barbadoes*. And now, seeing this commodity, Sugar, hath gotten so much the start of all the rest of those, that were held the staple Commodities of the Island, and so much over-top't them, as they are for the most part slighted and neglected. And, for that few in *England* know the trouble and care of making it, I think it convenient, in the first place, to acquaint you, as far as my memory will serve, with the whole process of the work of Sugar-making, which is now grown the soul of Trade in this Island. And leaving to trouble you and my self, with relating the errors our Predecessors so long wandred in, I will in brief set down the right and best way they practised, when I left the Island, which, I think, will admit of no greater or farther improvement.

But, before I will begin with that, I will let you see, how much the land there hath been advanc'd in the profit, since the work of Sugar began, to the time of our landing there, which was not above five or six years; For, before the work began, this Plantation of Major *Hilliards*, of five hundred acres, could have been purchased for four hundred pound sterling; and now the halfe this Plantation, with the halfe of the Stock upon it, was sold for seven thousand pound sterling. And it is evident, that all the land there, which has been imployed to that work, hath found the like improvement. And I believe, when the small Plantations in poor mens hands, of ten, twenty, or thirty acres, which are too small to lay to that work, be bought up by great men, and put together, into Plantations of five, six, or seven hundred acres, that two thirds of the Island will be fit for Plantations of Sugar, which will make it one of the richest Spots of earth under the Sun.

And now, since I have put my self upon this Discovery, I think it fit to let you know the nature of the Plant, the right way of Planting it, the manner of growth, the time of growing to ripeness, the manner of cutting, bringing home, the place where to lay them, being brought home, the time they may lye there, without spoyl, the manner of grinding or squeezing them, the conveyance of the liquor to the Cisterns, how long it may stay there without harme, the manner of boyling and skimming, with the conveyance of the skimmings into the Cisterns, in the Still-house, the manner of distilling it, which makes the strongest Spirits that men can drink, with the temper to be put in; what the temper is, the time of cooling the Sugar before it be put into the Pots; the time it stales in the Curing house, before it be good Muscavado Sugar. And last, the making of it into Whites, which we call Lump-Sugar.

First then, it is fit to set down, what manner of place is to be chosen,



sen, to set this Sugar-work, or Ingenio, upon; and it must be the brow of a small hill, that hath within the compass of eighty foot, twelve foot descent, viz. from the grinding place, which is the highest ground, and stands upon a flat, to the Still-house, and that by these descents: From the grinding place to the boyling house, four foot and a half, from thence to the fire-room, seven foot and a half; and some little descent to the Still-house. And the reason of these descents are these; the top of the Cistern, into which the first liquor runs, is, and must be somewhat lower than the Pipe that conveys it, and that is a little under ground. Then the liquor which runs from that Cistern must vent it self at the bottom, otherwise it cannot run all out; and that Cistern is two foot and a half deep: and so, running upon a little descent, to the clarifying Copper, which is a foot and a half above the flowre of the Boyling house, (and so is the whole Frame, where all the Coppers stand); it must of necessity fall out, that the flowre of the Boyling-house must be below the flowre of the Mill-house, four foot and a half. Then admit the largest Copper be a foot and a half deep, the bottom of the Copper will be lower then the flowre of the Boyling-house, by a foot; the bottom of the Furnaces must be three foot below the Coppers; and the holes under the Furnaces, into which the ashes fall, is three foot below the bottom of the Furnace: A little more fall is required to the Still-house, and so the account is made up. Upon what place the Sugar-work is to be set, I have drawn two Plots, that express more than language can do, to which I refer you. And so I have done with the Ingenio, and now to the work I promised, which I shall be brief in.

When I first arrived upon the Island, it was in my purpose, to observe their severall manners of planting and husbandry there; and because this Plant was of greatest value and esteem, I desired first the knowledge of it. I saw by the growth, as well as by what I had been told, that it was a strong and lusty Plant, and so vigorous, as where it grew, to forbid all Weeds to grow very neer it; so thirstily it suck't the earth for nourishment, to maintain its own health and gallantry.

But the Planters, though they know this to be true, yet, by their manner of Planting, did not rightly pursue their own knowledge; for their manner was, to dig small holes, at three foot distance, or there about, and put in the Plants endwise, with a little stooping, so that each Plant brought not forth above three or four sprouts at the most, and they being all fastned to one root, when they grew large, tall, and heavy, and stormes of wind and rain came, (and those raines there, fall with much violence and weight) the roots were loosened, and the Canes lodged, and so became rotten, and unfit for service in making good Sugar. And besides, the roots being far asunder, weeds grew up betveen, and worse then all weeds, Withs, vvhich are of a stronger growth then the Canes, and do much mischief vvhich they are; for, they vvindle about them, and pull them down to the ground, as disdainig to see a prouder Plant than themselves. But experience taught us, that this vvay of planting vvvas most pernicious, and therefore vvvere resolved to try another, vvvhich is, vvwithout question, the best; and that



is, by digging a small trench of six inches broad, and as much deep, in a straight line, the vvhole length of the land you mean to plant, laying the earth on one side the trench as you make it; then lay tvvo Canes along the bottom of the trench, one by another, and so continue them the vvhole length of the trench, to the lands end, and cover them vvith the earth you laid by; and at tvvo foot distance, another of the same, and so a third and fourth, till you have finish'd all the land you intend to plant at that time: For, you must not plant too much at once, but have it to grovv ripe successively, that your vvork may come in order, to keep you still doing; for, if it should be ripe all together, you are not able to vvork it so; and then for vvant of cutting, they vvould rot, and grovv to loss: By planting it thus along, tvvo together, every knot vvill have a sprout, and so a particular root, and by the means of that, be the more firmer fixt in the ground, and the better able to endure the vvind and vveather, and by their thick grovvng together, be the stronger to support one another. By that time they have been in the ground a month, you shall perceive them to appear, like a land of green Wheat in *England*, that is high enough to hide a Hare; and in a month more, tvvo foot high at least. But upon the first months grovvth, those that are careful, and the best husbands, command their Overseers to seareh, if any vveeds have taken root, and destroy them, or if any of the Plants fail, and supply them; for vvhere the Plants are vvanting, vveeds vvill grovv, for, the ground is too vertuous to be idle. Or, if any Withs grovv in those vacant places, they vvill spread very far, and do much harm, pulling dovvn all the Canes they can reach to. If this husbandry be not used vvhen the Canes are young, it vvill be too late to find a remedy; for, vvhen they are grovv to a height, the blades vvill become rough and sharp in the sides, and so cut the skins of the Negres, as the blood vvill follow; for their bodies, leggs, and feet, being uncloathed and bare, cannot enter the Canes vvithout smart and loss of blood, vvich they vvill not endure. Besides, if the Overseers stay too long, before they repair these void places, by new Plants, they will never be ripe together, which is a very great harm to the whole field, for which there is but one remedy, and that almost as ill as the disease, which is, by burning the whole field, by which they lose all the time they have grown: But the roots continuing secure from the fire, there arises a new spring all together; so that to repair this loss of time, they have onely this recompence, which is, by burning an army of the main enemies to their profit, Rats, which do infinite harm in the Island, by gnawing the Canes, which presently after will rot, and become unserviceable in the work of Sugar. And that they may do this justice the more severely, they begin to make their fire at the out-sides of that land of Canes they meant to burn, and so drive them to the middle, where at last the fire comes, and burns them all; and this great execution they put often in practice, vvithout Assises or Sessions; for, there are not so great enemies to the Canes, as these Vermin; as also to the Houses, where they lay up their stores of Corn and other provisions; and likewise in dwelling houses for their victuals. For, vvhen the great down-falls of rain come, which is in *November* and *December*, and in the time of the *Tornado*.



*nado*, they leave the field, and shelter themselves in the dwelling houses, where they do much mischief.

The Canes with their tops or blades, do commonly grow to be eight foot high; the Canes themselves are commonly five or six foot, (I have seen some double that length, but 'tis but seldome) the bodies of them, about an inch diametre, the knots above five or six inches distant one to another, many times three or four inches, some more, some lesse, for there is no certain rule for that; the colour of the blades, and tops, pure grass green; but the Canes themselves, when they are ripe of a deep Popinjay; and then they yeeld the greater quantity, and fuller and sweeter juyce. The manner of cutting them is with little hand bills, about six inches from the ground; at which time they divide the tops from the Canes, which they do with the same bills, at one stroak; and then holding the Canes by the upper end, they strip off all the blades that grow by the sides of the Canes, which tops and blades are bound up in faggots, and put into Carts, to carry home; for without these, our Horses and Cattle are not able to work, the pasture being so extream harsh and sapless, but with these they are very well nourisht and kept in heart. The Canes we likewise bind up in faggots, at the same time, and those are commonly brought home upon the backs of *Affinigos*, and we use the fashion of *Devon-shire* in that kind of Husbandry, (for there we learnt it) which is small pack-saddles, and crooks which serve our purposes very fitly, laying upon each Crook a faggot, and one a top, so that each *Affinigo* carries his three faggots; and being accustomed to go between the field and the place where they are to unload, will of themselves make their returns without a guide; So understanding this little beast in performing his duty. The place where they unload, is a little platform of ground, which is contiguous to the Mill-house, which they call a *Barbyon*; about 30 foot long and 10 foot broad; done about with a double rayle to keep the Canes from falling out of that room; where one, or two, or more, (who have other work to do in the Mill-house,) when they see the *Affinigos* coming, and make a stop there, are ready to unload them, and so turning them back again, they go immediately to the field, there to take in fresh loadings; so that they may not unfitly be compar'd to Bees; the one fetching home Honey, the other Sugar: being laid on the *Barbyon*, we work them out clean, and leave none to grow stale, for if they should be more then two dayes old, the juyce will grow sour, and then they will not be fit to work, for their sourness will infect the rest; The longest time they stay, after they are cut, to the time of grinding, is from Saturday evening to Munday morning at one or two a clock; and the necessity of Sunday coming between, (upon which we do not work) causes us to stay so long, which otherwise we would not do. The manner of grinding them, is this, the Horses and Cattle being put to their tackle, they go about, and by their force turne (by the sweeps) the middle roller; which being Cog'd to the other two, at both ends, turne them about; and they are three, turning upon their Centres, which are of Brass and Steel, going very easily of themselves, and so easie as a mans taking hold of one of the sweeps with his hand will turne all the rollers about with much ease. But when the Canes are put in be-



tween the rollers, it is a good draught for five Oxen or Horses; a *Negre* puts in the Canes of one side, and the rollers draw them through to the other side, where another *Negre* stands, and receives them; and returns them back on the other side of the middle roller, which draws the other way. So that having past twice through, that is forth and back, it is conceived all the juyce is prest out; yet the Spaniards have a press, after both the former grindings, to press out the remainder of the liquor but they having but small works in *Spain*, make the most of it, whilst we having far greater quantities, are loath to be at that trouble. The Canes having past to and again, there are young *Negre* Girles, that carry them away, and lay them on a heap, at the distance of six score paces or thereabout; where they make a large hill, if the work have continued long: under the rollers, there is a receiver, as big as a large Tray; into which the liquor falls, and stays not there, but runs under ground in a Pipe or gutter of lead, cover'd over close, which pipe or gutter, carries it into the Cistern, which is fixt neer the staires, as you go down from the Mill-house to the boyling house. But it must not remain in that Cistern above one day, lest it grow sower; from thence it is to passe through a gutter, (fixt to the wall) to the Clarifying Copper, as there is occasion to use it, and as the work goes on, and as it Clarifies in the first Copper, and the skumme rises, it is conveyed away by a passage, or gutter for that purpose; as also of the second Copper, both which skimmings, are not esteem'd worth the labour of stilling; because the skum is dirtie and gross: But the skimmings of the other three Coppers, are conveyed down to the Still-house, there to remain in the Cisterns, till it be a little sower, for till then it will not come over the helme. This liquor is remov'd, as it is refin'd, from one Copper to another; and the more Coppers it passeth through, the finer and purer it is, being continually drawn up, and keel'd by ladles, and skim'd by skimmers, in the *Negres* hands, till at last it comes to the tach, where it must have much labour, in keeling and stirring; and as it boyles, there is thrown into the four last Coppers, a liquor made of water and ashes which they call *Temper*, without which, the Sugar would continue a Clammy substance and never kerne. The quantities they put in are small, but being of a tart quality it turnes the ropiness and clamminess of the Sugar to cruddle and separate: which you will find, by taking out some drops of it, to Candy, and suddenly to grow hard; and then it has enough of the fire. Upon which Essay they presently poure two spoonfuls of Sallet Oyle into the tach, and then immediately it gives over to bubble or rise. So after much keeling, they take it out of the tach, by the ladles they use there, and put it into ladles that are of greater receipt, with two handles, and by them remove it into the cooling Cistern, neer the stayers that goes to the fire room: But as they remove the last part of the liquor out of the tach, they do it with all the celerity they can; and suddenly cast in cold water, to cool the Copper from burning, for the fire in the furnace, continues still in the same heat: and so when that water is removed out again by the Ladles, they are in the same degree careful, and quick, as soon as the last Ladle full is taken out, to throw in some of the liquor



liquor of the next Copper, to keep the tach from burning, and so fill it up out of the next, and that out of the third, and that out of the fourth, and that out of the Clarifying Copper, and so from the Cistern, and so from the Mill-house or Ingenio. And so the work goes on, from Munday morning at one a clock, till Saturday night, (at which time the fire in the Furnaces are put out) all houres of the day and night, with fresh supplies of Men, Horses, and Cattle. The Liquor being come to such a coolness, as it is fit to be put into the Pots, they bring them neer the Cooler, and stopping first the sharp end of the Pot (which is the bottom) with Plantine leaves, (and the passage there no bigger then a mans finger will go in at) they fill the Pot, and set it between the stantions, in the filling room, where it staies till it be thorough cold, which will be in two dayes and two nights; and then if the Sugar be good, knock upon it with the knuckle of your finger, as you would do upon an earthen pot, to try whether it be whole, and it will give a sound; but if the Sugar be very ill, it will neither be very hard, nor give any sound. It is then to be removed into the Cureing house, and set between stantions there: But first, the stopples are to be pull'd out of the bottom of the pots, that the Molosses may vent it self at that hole, and so drop down upon a gutter of board, hollowed in the middle, which conveyeth the Molosses from one to another, till it be come into the Cisterns, of which there is commonly four, at either corner one; and there remains, till it rise to a good quantity, and then they boyl it again, and of that they make Penceles, a kind of Sugar somewhat inferiour to the Muscavado; but yet will sweeten indifferently well, and some of it very well coloured. The pots being thus opened at the bottoms, the Molosses drops out, but so slowly, as hardly to vent it selfe in a month, in which time, the Sugar ought to be well cur'd; and therefore they thought fit, to thrust a spike of wood in at the bottom, that should reach to the top, hoping by that means, to make way for the Molosses to have the speedier passage: But they found little amendment in the purging, and the reason was this, the spike as it went in, prest the Sugar so hard, as it stopt all pores of passage for the Molosses. So finding no good to come of this, they devis'd another way, and that was, by making an augure of Iron, which instrument cuts his way, without pressing the Sugar, and by that means the Molosses had a free passage, without any obstruction at all. And so the Sugar was well cur'd in a month. As for the manner of using it, after it is cur'd, you shall find it set down in my Index, to the plot of the Cureing house. And this is the whole process of making the Muscavado Sugar, whereof some is better, and some worse, as the Canes are; for, ill Canes can never make good Sugar.

I call those ill, that are gathered either before or after the time of such ripeness, or are eaten by Rats, and so consequently rotten, or pull'd down by Withes, or lodg'd by foule weather, either of which, will serve to spoil such Sugar as is made of them. At the time they expect it should be well cur'd, they take the pots from the stantions in the Curing-house, and bring them to the knocking room, which you shall find upon the plot of the cureing house; and turning it up-  
side



side down, they knock the pot hard against the ground, and the Sugar comes whole out, as a bullet out of a mold; and when it is out, you may perceive three sorts of colours in the pot, the tops somevvhath brownish, and of a frothy light substance; the bottom of a much darker colour, but heavy, gross, moist, and full of Molosses; both which they cut away, and reserve to be boyl'd again, with the Molosses for peneles: The middle part, which is more then two thirds of the whole pot, and looks of a bright colour, dry and sweet, they lay by it self, and send it down daily upon the backs of Assinigoes and Camells, in leather baggs, with a Tarr'd cloth over, to their Store-houses at the *Bridge*, there to be put in Caskes and Chests, to be shipt away for *England*, or any other parts of the World, where the best market is. Though this care be taken, and this course used, by the best husbands, and those that respect their credits, as Collonel *James Drax*, Collonel *Walrond*, Mr. *Raynes*, and some others that I know there; yet, the greater number, when they knock out their Sugars, let all go together, both bottom and top, and so let the better bare out the worse. But, when they come to the Merchant to be sold, they will not give above 3li. 10s. for the one; and for the other, about 6li. 4s. And those that use this care, have such credit with the Buyer, as they scarce open the Cask to make a tryal; so well they are assured of the goodness of the Sugars they make; as of Collonel *James Drax*, Collonel *Walrond*, Mr. *Raines*, and some others in the Island that I know.

I have yet said nothing of making white Sugars, but that is much quicker said than done: For, though the Muscavado Sugar, require but a months time to make it so, after it is boyl'd; yet the Whites require four months, and it is only this. Take clay, and temper it with water, to the thicknes of Frumenty, or Pease pottage, and poure it on the top of the Muscavado Sugar, as it stands in the pot, in the Curing-house, and there let it remain four months; and if the clay crack and open, that the aire come in, close it up with some of the same, either with your hand, or a small Trowell. And when you knock open these pots, you shall find a difference, both in the colour and goodness, of the top and bottom, being but to such a degree, as may be rank'd with Muscavadoes; but the middle perfect White, and excellent Lump-Sugar, the best of which will sell in *London* for 20d. a pound.

I do not remember I have left unsaid any thing, that conduces to the work of Sugar-making, unless it be, sometimes after great rains, (which moisten the aire more then ordinary) to lay it out upon fair daies in the Sun, upon cloaths, or in the knocking room, and sometimes to bring in pans of coals, well kindled, into the Curing-house. If I have omitted any thing here, you shall find it supplied in the Indexes of my Plots.

As for distilling the skimmings, which run down to the Still-house, from the three lesser Coppers, it is only this: After it has remained in the Cisterns, which my plot shews you in the Still-house, till it be a little soure, (for till then, the Spirits will not rise in the Still) the first Spirit that comes off, is a small Liquor, which we call

Low-



low-wines, which Liquor we put into the Still, and draw it off again; and of that comes so strong a Spirit, as a candle being brought to a near distance, to the bung of a Hogthead, or Butt, where it is kept, the Spirits will flie to it, and taking hold of it, bring the fire down to the vessell, and set all a fire, which immediately breakes the vessell, and becomes a flame, burning all about it that is combustible matter.

We lost an excellent Negro by such an accident, who bringing a Jar of this Spirit, from the Still-house, to the Drink-room, in the night, not knowing the force of the liquor he carried, brought the candle somewhat neerer than he ought, that he might the better see how to put it into the Funnel, which conveyed it into the Butt. But the Spirit being stirr'd by that motion, flew out, and got hold of the flame of the Candle, and so set all on fire, and burnt the poor Negro to death, who was an excellent servant. And if he had in the instant of firing, clapt his hand on the bung, all had been saved; but he that knew not that cure, lost the whole vessel of Spirits, and his life to boot. So that upon that misadventure, a strict command was given; that none of those Spirits should be brought to the Drink-room ever after in the night, nor no fire or Candle ever to come in there.

This drink, though it had the ill hap to kill one Negro, yet it has had the vertue to cure many; for when they are ill, with taking cold, (which often they are) and very well they may, having nothing under them in the night but a board, upon which they lie, nor any thing to cover them: And though the daies be hot, the nights are cold, and that change cannot but work upon their bodies, though they be hardy people. Besides, coming home hot and sweating in the evening, sitting or lying down, must needs be the occasion of taking cold, and sometimes breeds sicknesses amongst them, which when they feel, they complain to the Apothecary of the Plantation, which we call Doctor, and he gives to every one a dram cup of this Spirit, and that is a present cure. And as this drink is of great use, to cure and refresh the poor Negroes, whom we ought to have a special care of, by the labour of whose hands, our profits are brought in; so is it helpful to our Christian Servants too; for, when their spirits are exhausted, by their hard labour, and sweating in the Sun, ten hours every day, they find their stomacks debilitated, and much weakened in their vigour every way, a dram or two of this Spirit, is a great comfort and refreshing to them. This drink is also a commodity of good value in the Plantation; for we send it down to the *Bridges*, and there put it off to those that retail it. Some they sell to the Ships, and is transported into foreign parts, and drunk by the way. Some they sell to such Planters, as have no Sugar-works of their own, yet drink excessively of it, for they buy it at easie rates; half a crown a gallon was the price, the time that I was there; but they were then purposing to raise the price to a deerer rate. They make weekly, as long as they work, of such a Plantation as this 30 l sterling, besides what is drunk by their servants and slaves.

And now for a close of this work of Sugar, I will let you see, by way  
B b  
of



of estimate, to what a Revenue this Island is raised; and, in my opinion, not improbable. If you will be pleased to look back to the extent of the Island, you shall find, by taking a medium of the length and breadth of it, that there is contained in the Island 392 square miles,

28

14

112

28

392

out of which we will subtract a third part, which is the most remote part of the Island from the *Bridge*, where all, or the most part of Trade is, which by many deep and steep Gullies interposing, the passage is in a manner stop'd: besides, the Land there is not so rich and fit to bear Canes as the other; but may be very usefull for planting provisions of Corn, Yeams, Bonavista, Cassavie, Potatoes; and likewise of Fruits, as Oranges, Limons, Lymes, Plantines, Bonanoes; as also, for breeding Hogs, Sheep, Goats, Cattle, and Poultry, to furnish the rest of the Island, that want those Commodities. For which reasons, we will subtract a third part from 392. and that is 130. and so the re-

392 (130)

333

392

130

262

maining  $\frac{2}{3}$  is 262 square miles; the greatest part of which may be laid to Sugar-works, and some to be allowed and set out for small Plantations, which are not able to raise a Sugar-work or set up an Ingenio, by reason of the paucity of acres, being not above twenty, thirty, or forty acres in a Plantation; but these will be fit to bear Tobacco, Ginger, Cotten-wool, Maies, Yeames, and Potatoes, as also for breeding Hogs. But most of these will in short time, be bought up by great men, and laid together, into Plantations of five, six, and seven hundred acres. And then we may make our computation thus, *viz.* A mile square will contain 640 acres of land, and here we see is 262 acres, being  $\frac{2}{3}$  of the Island. So then, we multiply 262 by 640. and the product will amount unto 167680. Now we will put the case, that some of those men that have small Plantations, will not sell them, but keep them for provisions, which they may live plentifully upon; for those provisions they raise, will sell at good rates; for which use, we will set out thirty thousand acres. So then we subtract 30000 acres from 167680, and there will remain 137680 acres, to be for Sugar-works; out of which,  $\frac{2}{3}$  may be planted with Canes, the other  $\frac{1}{3}$  for Wood, Pasture, and Provisions, which must support the Plantations, according to the scale of Collonel *Modiford's* Plantation, as I said



640	
262	
<hr/>	
1280	3218
3840	137688 (27536
1280	55558 (27536
<hr/>	
167680	55072
30000	
<hr/>	
137680	

said before. Now these two fifts are, as you see 55072 acres, and an acre of good Canes will yield 4000 pound weight of Sugar, and none will yield less then 2000 weight; but we will take a *Medium*, and rest upon 3000 weight, upon which we will make our computation, and set our price upon the Sugar, according to the lowest rates, which shall be 3 d. per pound, as it is Muscavado, to be sold upon the Island, at the *Bridge*. In fifteen months the Canes will be ripe, and in a month more, they will be well cur'd, and ready to be cast up, and stowed in the Ware-house. So here, we make our computation upon the place, and say, 3000 threepences is 37 l. 10 s. ten acres of which is 375 l. sterling. So then we say, if 10 acres of Canes will produce 375 l. what shall 55072. which is the number of acres contained upon the  $\frac{1}{3}$  of the land, allotted for Sugar Plantations, upon which the Canes must grow: and by the Rule of 3. we find, that it amounts to 2065200. in sixteen months: Now add four months more to the time of curing, and

	55072	
	375	
	<hr/>	
	275360	
	385504	
	165216	
	<hr/>	
10	375 l.	2065200 [0
55072	2065200 l.	2065200
	<hr/>	
	4130400	
	1032600	
	<hr/>	
	3097800	
	3097800	
	<hr/>	
	6195600	

making it into whites, which is that we call Lump-Sugar in *England*, and then the price will be doubled to 4130400. out of which we will abate  $\frac{1}{4}$  for waste, and what is cut off from the tops and bottoms of the pots, which will be good Muscavadoes; but we will abate for that, and waste  $\frac{1}{4}$  which is 1032600. and that we will subtract from 4130400. and there remains 3097800. which is the totall of the re-



venue of Sugars, that grow on the *Barbadoes* for twenty months, and accounted there, upon the Iland, at the Bridge. But if you will run the Hazards of the Sea, as all Marchants doe, and bring it for England, it will sell in London, for 12 d. the pound, and so 'tis doubled again; and then it will amount to 6195600. and in two months time more it will be in England. Now you see what a vast Revenew this little spot of ground can produce in 22 months time; And so I have done with this plant, onely one touch more, to conclude with all, as Musitians, that first play a Preludium, next a Lesson, and then a Saraband; which is the life and spirit of all the rest. So having played you a short Preludium, to this long and tedious lesson of Sugar and Sugar-making, I do think fit to give you a Saraband, with my best Touches at last; which shall be only this, that as this plant has a faculty, to preserve all fruits, that grow in the world, from corruption and putrifaction; So it has a virtue, being rightly applyed, to preserve us men in our healths and fortunes too. Doctor *Butler* one of the most learned and famous Physicians that this Nation, or the world ever bred, was wont to say that,

*If Sugar can preserve both Peares and Plumbs,  
Why can it not preserve as well our Lungs?*

And that it might work the same effect on himself, he alwayes drank in his Claret wine, great store of the best refin'd Sugar, and also prescribed it several wayes to his Patients, for Colds, Coughs, and Catarrs; which are diseases, that reign much in cold Climates, especially in Ilands, where the Ayre is moyster then in Continents; and so much for our Health.

Now for our fortunes, they are not onely preserv'd, but made by the powerful operation of this plant.

Colonel *James Drax*, whose beginning upon that Iland, was founded upon a stock not exceeding 300 l. sterling, has raised his fortune to such a height, as I have heard him say, that he would not look towards England, with a purpose to remain there, the rest of his life, till he were able to purchase an estate of ten thousand pound land yearly; which he hop'd in few years to accomplish, with what he was then owner of; and all by this plant of Sugar. Colonel *Thomas Modiford*, has often told me, that he had taken a Resolution to himself, not to set his face for England, till he had made his voyage, and employment there, worth him an hundred thousand pounds sterling; and all by this Sugar plant. And these, were men of as percing sights, and profound judgments, as any I have known in that way of management. Now if such Estates as these, may be raised, by the well ordering this plant, by Industrious and painful men, why may not such estates, by careful keeping, and orderly and moderate expending, be preserv'd, in their posterities, to the tenth Generation, and by all the sweet Negotiation of Sugar?

One Vegetable we have on the Iland, which will neither become the name of a Tree, or a plant; and that is a Withe; which is in some respect, the harmfulest weed that can grow; for it pulls down all that it can reach to, Canes, and all other small plants, it makes nothing of.



of; if it be suffer'd to look up in a Garden, it vwill vwind about all Herbs and Plants that have stalks, pull them down and destroy them; or if it find the vway into any Orchard, it vwill clime up by the bodies of the trees into the branches, and there invwrap them so, as to draw them (as it were) into a purse, (for out of the main stalk, hundreds of small sprigs will grow,) and if any other tree be so neer, as to touch it, it will find the way to it, and pull the tops of them together, and utterly disfigure the trees, and hinder the growth of the fruit; and if you cut the main stalk below, neer the root, in hope to kill it, the moysture above in the branches, will thrust down a Vine into the ground, and get a new root: Nay, this is not all the mischief, for it will reach the highest timber, and involve and envwrap so the branches, as to hinder their growths, and many times fasten one tree to another, that one shall hinder the growth of another. A couple of Colonel *Draxer* Axemen were felling a tree, and about the time it began to bend, that they perceiv'd which way it would fall, got clear on the other side, and thought themselves safe: But this being fastned to another by strong Withes, pull'd a great branch of that tree after it, which fell upon the fellers, and bruised them so, as they hardly scap'd with their lives. Cleere a passage of ten foot broad, that goes between a wood and a land of Canes overnight, and come next morning, and you shall find the way crost all over with Withs, and got neer the Canes; So that if you had left your visit till the next day, they had gotten into the Canes, and then it would be too late to help: for when they are mixt with them you cannot destroy the one without the other, for where-soever they touch ground they get new roots, and so creep into every place, and as they go pull down all. These harmful Withes, have with all these vices some virtues. They serve for all uses where roaps or cords are required, as for binding our Wood and Canes into faggots, or what else roapes are needful for; and without them we were in ill condition for we have not any wood fit to make hoops for hogheads, barrels, rubbs, or what not; and we can have them of what length and bigness we please, and they are for that use very good.

Several kinds of these Withes there are, some that bear fruit, somewhat bigger then the Cod of a Bean, which being divided long-wise with a sharp knife, you shall perceive the most various and beautifullest Colours that can be, and so well matcht, as to make up a very great beauty.

Fell a dosen acres of wood, going on in a straight line, and when the ground is cleered, the side of that wood you left standing will be likewise in the same strait line, and in a few years these Withes will mount to the tops of the Trees, which are for the most part, eighty or 100 foot high, and from that top to the ground, on the outside of the wood, all will be cover'd with leaves, and those are broad, green, and shining, so that if you be absent from the place two or three years, and look to find a wood, you find a fair green Curtain, 300 paces long, and 80 foot high, which is as pretty a *deceptio visus*, as you can find any where, and this is one of the pleasantest Vistos in the Island: the same things are done in the mouths or entrances of Caves, where



you shall find a Cave large enough to hold 500 men, and the mouth of it cover'd with a green curtain, 40 foot high, and 200 foot long; and so close a Curtaine it is (the vines being wrapt and interwove one into another) as without putting it aside, you can hardly have light to read by.

These Caves are very frequent in the Island, and of several dimensions, some small, others extreamly large and Capacious: The runaway Negres, often shelter themselves in these Coverts, for a long time, and in the night range abroad the Countrey, and steale Pigs, Plantins, Potatoes, and Pullin, and bring it there; and feast all day, upon what they stole the night before; and the nights being dark, and their bodies black, they scape undiscern'd.

There is nothing in that Countrey so useful as Liam Hounds, to find out these Thieves. I have gone into divers of those Caves, to try what kind of ayre is to be found there; and have felt it so close, and moyst withall, as my breath was neer stopt; and I do believe, if I should remain there but one night, I should never come out again.

I have often wondred, why such vast Caves and Rocks should not afford some springs of water, the ayre which touches them, being so very moyst; for we see in *England*, where Rocks are, Springs of water issue out; and sometimes (when wet weather is) the moysture hangs upon the Rocks in drops, and so runs down, and finds a way to vent it self into small bibling Springs; but here it does not so, though the Ayre be much moyster than in *England*: But certainly the reason is, the extraordinary driness, and spunginess of the Stone, which sucks up all moysture that touches it, and yet it is never satisfied.

I had it in my thoughts, to make an Essay, what Sir *Francis Bacons* experiment solitarie, touching the making of Artificial Springs would do; but troughs of that stone, being of so dry and spungy a quality, would never have been fit for it; besides, we have no brakes growing there, which is one of the materials us'd in that experiment.

Another sort of Withs we have, but they are made of the gum of trees, which falls from the boughs drop after drop, one hanging by another, till they touch ground; from whence they receive some nourishment, which gives them power to grow larger: and if it happen that three or four of them come down so neer one another as to touch, and the wind twist them together, they appear so like ropes, as they cannot be discern'd five paces off, whether it be a rope or a Withe. I have seen of these of several sizes, from the smallest whipcord to the greatest Cable of the Soveraine; and the most of those timber trees I have named, has them; some four, some five, some half a dozen, hanging down like Bell-ropes, from the branches to the ground, which was a sight of much rarity to me at first coming.

*Aloes.*

*Aloes* we have growing here, very good, and 'tis a beautiful plant; the leaves four inches broad,  $\frac{3}{4}$  of an inch thick, and about a foot and an half long, with prickles of each side; and the last sprout which rises up in the middle, bears yellow flowers, one above another, and those flowers are higher than any of the leaves by two foot. These thick  
leaves



leaves we take, and cut them through, and out of them issue the Aloes, which we set in the Sun, and that will rarifie it, and make it fit to keep. But it is the first coming which we save; for if we let it run too long, the second running will be much worse; but before that comes, we throw away the leaf. The leaves of this Plant, (which we call *semper vivens* in England, and growes neer the fire in Kitchens, hung up to a beam with an oyl'd clout about the root) with the inner bark of *Elder*, and some other ingredients, boyl'd in Sallet-oyle, is the best medicine in the world for a burn or a Scald, being presently applyed; and for that the medicine is beyond all that ever was, for that cure, I will set it down, and 'tis this.

Take *Semper vivens*, Plantine leaves, and the green rinde of *Elder*, of each a like quantity, and boyl them in Sallet-oyle, so much as will draw out all that tincture by boyling; then strain the Oyle well out, and put it on the fire again, and put to it a small quantity of spirit of Wine, and so much yellow Wax, as will bring it to the consistence of a Liniment.

One other Plant we have, and that is the Sensible plant, which closes the leaves upon any touch with your hand, or that end of your staff by which you hold, and in a little time will open again.

There are very few Flowers in the Island, and none of them sweet; as the white Lilly, which grows in the woods, and is much a fairer flower than ours; as also a red Lilly of the same bigness, but neither of them sweet. The *St. Jago* flower is very beautiful, but of a nauseous savour. One more we have, and that must not be forgotten for the rarity, because it opens, when all else close, when the Sun goes down; and for that reason we call it, the flower of the Moon: It growes in great tufts, the leaves almost in the form of a Heart, the point turning back, the flower somewhat bigger than a Primrose, but of the purest purple that ever I beheld. When this flower falls off, the seed appears, which is black, with an eye of purple; shap'd, and of the size of a small button, so finely wrought, and tough withall, as it might serve very well to trim a suit of apparel.

Flowers.

I know no herbs naturally growing in the Island, that have not been brought thither from other parts, but Purcelane; and that growes so universally, as the over-much plenty makes it disesteemed; and we destroy it as a Weed that cumbers the ground.

Rosemary, Time, Winter-savory, sweet Marjerom, pot Marjerom, Parsley, Penniroyal, Camomile, Sage, Tanfie, Lavender, Lavender-Cotten, Garlick, Onyons, Colworts, Cabbage, Turnips, Redishes, Marigolds, Lettice, Taragon, Southernwood. All these I carried with me in seeds, and all grew and prospered well. Leek-Seed I had, which appeared to me very fresh and good; but it never came up. Rose trees we have, but they never bear flowers.

English  
Herbs and  
Roots.

There is a Root, of which some of the Negroes brought the Seeds, and planted there, and they grew: 'Tis a very large Root, drie, and well tasted; the manner of planting it, is, to make little hills as big as Mole-hills, and plant the seed a top, and as soon as it puts forth the stalks, they turn down to the ground on either side, and then as they touch it, they thrust up a stalk, not unlike an Asparagus, but of a



purple colour. These being gathered, and eaten as a Sallet, with oyle, vinegar, and salt, will serve an ordinary pallet, where no better isto be had: But the root truly is very good meat, boyl'd with powdred pork, and eaten with butter, vinegar, and pepper. Most of these roots are as large, as three of the biggest Turnips we have in *England*. We carried divers of them to Sea, for our provision, which stood us in good stead, and would have serv'd us plentifully in our great want of Victuals; but the Rats (of which we had infinite numbers aboard) rob'd us of the most part.

*Strength of  
the Island by  
Nature to  
Seaward.*

That part of the Island which lies to the windeward, and is part East, part North, the stormes and stiffe windes coming from those points, have so wash'd away all earthly substance, as there remains nothing but steep Rocks; and the Sea being very deep on that side, the Anchors will hardly touch the bottom, though the Cables be long; so that what Ship soever rides on that side, comes at her own peril. Contrarily, if any Ship be under Sail, on the Leeward side, and goes but so far out, as to lose the shelter of the Island, it is certain to be carried away down to the leeward Islands, and then it will be a very hard work to beat it up again, without putting out into the main. So that there can hardly be any safe landing, but vvhere the Harbours and Baies are, vvwhich lie to the Southvvest; and those places are so defensible by Nature, as vvith small costs, they may be very strongly fortified. But they have *been much neglected by the Proprietor*, for vvwhich reason, (and some others) the Planters refused to call him by that name. There vvvas a Gentleman in the Island, vvho pretended to be a Soldier, and an Ingeneer, that undertook to fortifie all the landing places, and to furnish them vvith such store of Artillery, as should be sufficient to defend them; provided, he might have the Excise paid to him for seven years, vvwhich vvvas promised by the Governours and Assembly. Whereupon he vvvent to vvork, and made such a Fort, as vvhen abler Ingeneers came upon the Island, they found to be most pernicious; for, commanding all the Harbour, and not of strength to defend it self, if it vvvere taken by an enemy, might do much harm to the land-vvard. So that at my coming from thence, they vvvere pulling it down, and instead of it, to make Trenches, and Rampiers, vvith Pallisadoes, Horn-vvorks, Curtains, and Counter-scarfes; and having left a very good Fortification of standing vvood round about the Island near the Sea, these vvvere thought as much as needed for their defence, against the landing of any forraign Forces, and for their strength vvithin.

*Captain  
Burrows.*

*Strength of  
the Island  
within land.*

They built three Forts, one for a Magazine to lay their Ammunition and Povvder in, the other vvvo to make their retreats upon all occasions. At my coming from thence, they vvvere able to muster ten thousand Foot, as good men, and as resolute as any in the vvorld, and a thousand good Horfe; and this vvvas the strength of the Island about the time I came avway.

*How Governed  
and how  
Divided.*

They Govern the c by the Lawes of *England*, for all Criminal, Civil, Martial, Ecclesiastical, and Maritime affairs.

This Lawv is administred by a Governour, and ten of his Council, four Courts of ordinary Justice, in Civil causes, vvwhich divide the land



land in four Circuits; Justices of Peace, Constables, Churchwardens, and Tithing-men: five Sessions in the year, for tryal of Criminal causes, and all Appeals from inferiour Courts, in Civil causes. And when the Governour pleases to call an Assembly, for the supreme Court of all, for the last Appeals, for making new Laws and abolishing old, according to occasion, in nature of the Parliament of *England*, and accordingly consists of the Governour, as Supreme, his Council, in nature of the Peers, and two Burgeses chosen by every Parish for the rest. The Island is divided into eleven Parishes, no Tithes paid to the Minister, but a yearly allowance of a pound of Tobacco, upon an acre of every mans land, besides certain Church-duties, of Marriages, Christenings, and Burials.

A standing Commission there was also, for punishing Adultery and Fornication, though rarely put in execution.

Something would be said concerning the seasons of the year; but it is little, and therefore will be the least troublesome. Four months in the year, the weather is colder then the other eight, and those are *November, December, January* and *February*; yet they are hotter then with us in *May*. There is no general Fall of the leaf, every Tree having a particular fall to himself; as if two Locusts stands at the distance of a stones cast, they have not their falls at one time; one Locust will let fall the leaves in *January*, another in *March*, a third in *July*, a fourth in *September*; and so all months one kind of Trees having their several times of falling: But if any months falls more leaves then other, 'tis *February*; for so in my nicest observation I found it. The leaves we find fallen under the trees, being the most of them large and stiffe, when they were growing, and having many veins, which go from the middle stalk, to the uppermost extent of the leaf, when the thin part of the leaf is rotten and consum'd, those veins appear like Anatomies, with the strangest works and beautifulest forms that I have seen, fit to keep as a rarity in the Cabinets of the greatest Princes. As also the Negres heads, which we find in the Sands, and they are about two inches long, with a forehead, eyes, nose, mouth, chin, and part of the neck; I cannot perceive any root by which they grow, but find them alwayes loose in the sand; nor is it a fruit that falls from any tree, for then we should find it growing; black it is as jet, but from whence it comes, no man knows.

Mines there are none in this Island, not so much as of Coal, for which reason, we preserve our Woods as much as we can.

*Mines.*

We find flowing out of a Rock in one part of the Island, an unctuous substance, somewhat like Tarre, which is thought to have many vertues yet unknown; but is already discovered to be excellent good to stop a flux, by drinking it, but by annointing for all aches and bruises, and so subtile it is, as being put into the palm of the hand, and rub'd there, it will work through the back.

Another gummy substance there is, black, and hard as pitch, and is used as pitch; 'tis called Mountjack.

Having given you in my Bills of Fare, a particular of such Viands, as this Island afforded, for supportation of life, and somewhat for delight too, as far as concerns the Table; yet, what are you the better



[*Most of  
this Para-  
graph is  
mentioned  
before.*]

for all this, when you must be scorch't up from morning till night with the torrid heat of the Sun; So as in that twelve hours, you hardly can find two, in which you can enjoy your self with contentment. Or how can you expect to find heat, or warmth in your stomach, to digest that meat, when the Sun hath exhausted your heat and spirits so to your outer parts, as you are chill'd and numb'd within? For which reason you are compell'd to take such remedies, as are almost as ill as the disease; liquors so strong, as to take away the breath as it goes down, and red pepper for spice, vvhich vvants little of the heat of a fire-coale; and all these vvill hardly dravv in the heat, which the Sun dravvs out; and part of this deficiency is occasioned by the improvidence, or inconsideration of the Inhabitants, vvho build their dvvellings, rather like stoves then houses; for the most of them are made of timber, lovv rooff keeping out the vvind, letting in the Sun, vvhen they have means to have it othervvise; for I vvill undertake to contrive a house so, as no one shall have just cause to complain of any excessive heat; and that vvhich gives this great remedy, shall bring vvith it the greatest beauty that can be look't on. The Palmetoes, vvhich being plac't (as I vvill give you directions in my plot) in convenient order, shall interpose so betvveen the Sun and house, as to keep it continually in the shade; and to have that shade at such a distance, as very little heat shall be felt in any time of the day: For shades that are made by the highest trees, are undoubtedly the coolest, and freshest, by reason it keeps the heat farthest off. Besides this, there are many advantages to be made, in the contrivance of the house; for I see the Planters there, never consider vvhich vvay they build their houses, so they get them up; vvhich is the cause that many of them, are so insufferably hot, as neither themselves nor any other can remain in them vvithout sweating.

First then, vve vvill consider vvhat the errors are in their contrivances, that vve may be the better able to shew the best vvay to mend them; A single house that is built long-vvise, and upon a North and South line, has these disadvantages: the Sun shines upon the East side-vvalls from six a clock till eight, so as the beams rest flat upon that side, for two hours. And the beams resting upon a flat or oblique line (as that is,) gives a greater heat then upon a diagonal, vvhich glaunces the beams aside. As a tennis ball, strook against the side walls of the Court, glauncing, hits with less force then when it feels the full resistance of the end wall, where 'tis met with a flat oblique line: So the Sun beams, the more directly they are oppos'd by any flat body, the more violently they burne. This side-wall being warm'd; the Sun getteth higher, and shines hotter, and then the rafters become the oblique line, which is thinner, and less able to resist the beams; and the covering being shingles, receives the heat quicker, and retains it longer, than tiles would do, so that for the whole forenoon, that side of the rooff, receives as much heat, as the Sun can give, and so passes over to the other side, giving it so much the more in the afternoon, as is increas'd by warming the house and Aire all the morning before, and so the Oven being heat on both sides, what can you expect, but that those within,



within, should be sufficiently bakt: and so much the more, for that the wind is kept out, that should come to cool it, by shutting up all passages, that may let it in, which they alwayes doe, for fear the raine come with it; and letting in the Sun at the West end, where and when it shines hottest. Therefore this kind of building is most pernicious to those that love their health, which is the comfort of their lives: but you will say, that a double house will lessen much of this heat, by reason that the West side is not visited by the sun in the morning, nor the East in the afternoon; I do confess that to be some little remedy, but not much, for the double roofs being open to the Sun, in oblique lines, a great part of the forenoon; and being reflected from one side to another, when it comes to the Meridian (and before and after, at least two hours,) with the scorching heat it gives to the gutter, which is between them, and is in the middle of the house from end to end, will so warm the East-side of the House, as all the shade it has in the afternoon will not cool it, nor make it habitable; and then you may guess in what a temper the West side is.

Whereas, if you build your house upon an East and West line, you have these advantages, that in the morning the Sun never shines in or neer an oblique line, (which is upon the East end of your house,) above two hours, and that is from six to eight a clock, and as much in the afternoon, and not all that time neither; and upon the roof it can never shine in an oblique line, but glancing on both sides, cast off the heat very much; I do confess that I love a double house, much better then a single, but if it have a double cover, that is, two gable ends, and a gutter between, though it be built up an East and West line: yet the Sun (which must lye upon it all the heat of the day) will so multiply the heat, by reflecting the beams from inside to inside, and so violently upon the gutter, from both, which you know must be in the middle of the house, from end to end, as you shall feel that heat above, too sensibly in the ground stories below, though your flooring be a foot thick, and your stories sixteen foot high. Therefore if I build a double house, I must order it so, as to have the division between either room of a strong wall, or of Dorique Pillers Archt from one to another, and in each intercolumniation a square stud of stone for the better strengthening and supporting of the Arches above; for I would have the rooms Archt over with stone, and the innermost poynts of the Arches, to rest upon the Pillars, and the whole house to be coverd with Couples and Rafter, and upon that shingles, the Ridge Pole of the house running along over the Pillars, so that the covering is to serve both Arches, that covers your rooms: by which means there is but one Gable end, which will glaunce off the scorching beams of the Sun of either side, as, with the help of the Arches underneath, there will be little heat felt in the rooms below. But then a main care must be had to the side walls, that the girders be strong, and very well Dove-tayld, one into another; upon the Dorique pillars, or partition walls; and well cramp't with Iron, or else the rafters being of that length, will thrust out the side walls by reason the Arches will hinder the Couplets from coming so low as to keep the rafters steady from opening at the bottom. For prevention



vention of this great mischief, it will be very needful to have strong Butteresses without, and those being plac't just against the Couples, will be of main concern to the side-walls. If you make the breadth of your house fifty foot, allowing two foot to the partition, and two foot to either of the side-walls above, (but more below) which is six foot in all, you will have remaining forty four foot, which being equally divided will afford twenty two foot for the breadth of either room, you may for the length allow what you please. But this I speak by permission, and not by direction. But I will send you a Plot with this, and an Index annexed to it, of such a house as I would build for pleasure and convenience, if I were to live there, and had money enough to bestow; and I believe, with such conveniences and advantages for shade and coolness, as few people in those Western parts have studied, or ever thought on.

And now I have as neer as I can, delivered the sum of all I know of the Island of *Barbadoes*, both for Pleasures and Profits, Commodities and Incommodities, Sickneses and Healthfulness. So that it may be expected what I can say to perswade or dissuade any that have a desire to go and live there. But before I give a full answer to that, I must enquire and be enformed of what disposition the party is that hath this design; If it be such a one as loves the pleasures of *Europe*, (or particularly of *England*) and the great varieties of those, let him never come there, for they are things he shall be sure to miss. But, if he can find in himself a willingness to change the pleasures which he enjoyed in a Temperate, for such as he shall find in a Torrid Zone, he may light upon some that will give him an exchange, with some advantage.

And for the pleasures of *England*, let us consider what they are, that we may be the better able to judge how far they are consistent with the Climate of *Barbadoes*, and what gainers or losers they will be by the exchange, that makes the adventure; and by the knowledge and well weighing of that, invite or deter those, that are the great lovers and admirers of those delights, to come there, or stay away.

And amongst the sports and recreations that the people of *England* exercise most for their healths without dores, they are Courting, Hunting and Hawking.

And for the Greyhound, though he be compleat in all his shapes that are accounted excellent; headed like a Snake, neckt like a Drake, back't like a Beam, sided like a Breme, tail'd like a Rat, footed like a Cat, deep breasted with large philllets and gaskins, excellently winded, with all else may style him perfect, and of a right race: Yet, what of all this, if the Country afford no Game to course at; or if there were, that would amount to nothing; for, in the running of twelve score yards, they will either bruise their bodies against stumps of trees, or break their necks down the steep falls of Gullies which are there too common.

And for the Huntsman and his Hounds they will find themselves at a dead fault, before they begin, for upon this soyle no Stag with his lofty well shap't head, and active body, has ever set his nimble feet; and Herds of Vallow Deer, were never put to make a stand upon  
this



this ground; the nimble Roe-Buck, nor the subtle Fox, the Badger, Otter, or the fearfull Hare, have ever run their Mases in these Woods. And then, what use of Hounds?

Onely one kind are useful here, and those are Liam Hounds, to guide us to the run away Negroes, who, as I told you, harbour themselves in Woods and Caves, living upon pillage for many months together.

And for the Faulconer, though his Hawk have reach'd such excellencies, as may exalt her praise as high, as her wings can raise her body; yet, she must be taken down to a bare Lure. And the painfull and skilfull Faulconer, who has applyed himself solely to the humour of the brave Bird he carries, who must be courted as a Mistress, be she never so froward, and like a coy Mistress, will take check at any thing, when her liberty gives her license; and though by a painfull and studied diligence, he have reclaimed her so, as to flie at what, and when, and where, and how she is directed; and she, by her own practice and observation, has learnt to know, which Spaniel lies, and which tells truth, that accordingly she may sleight the one, and regard the other, and with this, has all other qualities that are excellent, in so noble and heroick a Bird: Yet, this painful diligence in the Faulconer, this rare perfection in the Hawk, will be of little use, where there is neither Champion to fly in, Brooks to flie over, nor Game to flie at. No mountie at a Hieron, to cause the lusty Jerfaulcon to raise her to a losse of her self, from the eyes of her Keeper, till by many dangerous thorows, she binde with her Qnarrie, and both come tumbling down together. No teem of Ducks, or bunch of Teales, to cause the high flying Haggard make her stooping, and strike her Quarrie dead. And for the Ostringer, though his well-man'd Goshawk, or her bold mate the Tarcel, draw a Covert nere so well; yet, no Eye of Pheasants will spring, or pearch in these woods.

*The Eagle and the Sacre sure, here ever miss their prey.  
Since Bustard and the Barnacle, are never in the way.  
No Tarcel drawes a Covert here, no Lanner sits a mark;  
No Marline, flies a Partridge neer, no Hobbie dares a Lark.*

Another pleasure, the better sort of the people of *England* take delight in, which, in my opinion, may be rather call'd a toyle then a pleasure, and that is Race-Horses, forcing poor beasts beyond their power, who were given us for our moderate use. These exercises are too violent for hot Countries, and therefore we will forget them.

Shooting and Bowling may very well be used here; but at Butts onely, and in Bares, or close Allies, for the turfe here will never be fine enough for a Green, nor the ground soft enough, for an Arrow to fall on. Amongst all the sports without doores, that are used in *England*, these two are onely sufferable in the *Barbadoes*. But for the sports within the house, they may all be used there, as, all sorts of Gaming, viz. Chess, Tables, Cards, Dice, Shovel-abord, Billiards; and some kinds of Dances, but none of those that are laborious, as high and



loftie Capers, with Turnes above ground; these are too violent for hot Countries.

Some other kinds of pleasures they have in *England*, which are not so fully enjoyed in the *Barbadoes*, as smooth Champion to walk or ride on, with variety of Landscapes at several distances; all there being hem'd in with Wood, and those trees so tall and lofty as to hinder and bar the view so much, as (upon a level of plain) no Horizon can be seen. But upon the sides of Hills which look toward the Sea, your eye may range as far that way as the globical roundness of that watry Element will give way to; but that once seen, the eye is satisfied, and variety in that object there is none; for no shipping pass that way, but such as arrive at the Island. 'Tis true, that Woods made up of such beautifull Trees as grow there, are pleasant things to look on, and afford a very plentiful delight to the eyes; but when you are so enclos'd, as hardly to look out, you will find too quick and too full a satiety in that pleasure. But as the Woods are cut down, the Landscapes will appear at far distances.

Now for the beauty of the Heavens, they are as far transcending all we ever saw in *England*, or elsewhere 40 Degrees without the Line, on either side, as the land objects of the *Barbadoes* are short of ours in *Europe*. So he that can content himself with the beauties of the Heavens, may there be sufficiently satisfied. But we Mortals, that Till and love the earth, because our selves are made up of the same mold, take pleasure sometimes to look downward, upon the fruits and effects of our own labours; and when we find them thrive by the blessings of the great Creator, we look up to give thanks, where we find so great a glory, as to put us into astonishment and admiration.

Now for the smelling sense, though we have the blossomes of the Orange, Limon, Lyme, Cittron, Pomgranate, with the smell of that admirable fruit the Pine, and others: yet, when we consider the infinite variety of the Flowers of *England*, both for beauty and savour, there is no comparison between them; and the flowers there are very few in number, and in smell, not to be allowed in competition with ours of *England*: For, since the differences between the Houses of *York* and *Lancaster* have been laid aside, no red nor white Rose have grown there; but the Lillies have taken up the quarrel, and strive in as high a contest there, as the Roses have done in *England*; for, they are the fairest and purest, that I have ever seen, both red and white, but no sweet smell. He that could transplant the flowers of *England* to the *Barbadoes*, would do a rare work, but I fear to little purpose: For, though the virtual beams of the Sun, give growth and life to all the Plants and Flowers it shines on; yet, the influence is at several distances, and so the productions varie; some flowers must be warmed, some toasted, and some almost scalded; and to transpose these, and set them in contrary places, were to strive against nature. 'Tis true, that the Herbs of *England* grow and thrive there, by reason they are stronger, and better able to endure that change; but Flowers, that are of a more tender nature, will not endure so great heat as they find there. But to repair this sense, some will say, that Perfumes brought out of *Europe*, will plentifully supply us: But that will not at all avail us,



us, for what with the heat and moisture of the aire, it is all drawn out, as by my own experience I found it to be most true, though I lapp'd them close up in papers, and put them in drawers of a Cabinet, where no aire could find passage, they were so close; and for Pastills, they lost both their smell and taste.

As for Musick, and such sounds as please the ear, they with some supplies may come from *England*, both for Instruments and voyces, to delight that sense, that sometimes when they are tir'd out with their labour, they may have some refreshment by their ears; and to that end, they had a purpose to send for the Musick, that were wont to play at the *Black-Fryars*, and to allow them a competent salary, to make them live as happily there, as they had done in *England*: And had not extream weakness, by a miserable long sickness, made me uncapable of any undertaking, they had employed me in the business, as the likeliest to prevail with those men, whose persons and qualities were well known to me in *England*. And though I found at *Barbadoes* some who had musical minds; yet, I found others, whose souls were so fixt upon, and so riveted to the earth, and the profits that arise out of it, as their souls were lifted no higher; and those men think, and have been heard to say, that three whip-sawes, going all at once in a Frame or Pit, is the best and sweetest musick that can enter their ears; and to hear a Cow of their own low, or an Affinigo bray, no sound can please them better. But these mens souls were never lifted up so high, as to hear the musick of the Sphears, nor to be judges of that Science, as 'tis practised here on earth; and therefore we will leave them to their own earthly delights.

For the sense of feeling, it can be applyed but two wayes, either in doing or suffering; the poor Negres and Christian servants find it perfectly upon their heads and shoulders, by the hands of their severe Overseers; so that little pleasure is given the sense, by this coercive kind of feeling, more then a plaister for a broken Pate; but, this is but a passive kind of feeling: But take it in the highest, and most active way it can be applyed, which is upon the skins of women, and they are so sweaty and clammy, as the hand cannot passe over, without being glued and cemented in the passage or motion; and by that means, little pleasure is given to, or received by the agent or the patient: and therefore if this sense be neither pleased in doing nor suffering, we may decline it as useless in a Country, where down of Swans, or wool of Beaver is wanting.

Now for the sense of Tasting, I do confess, it receives a more home satisfaction, then all the rest, by reason of the fruits that grow there; so that the Epicure cannot be deceived, if he take a long journey to please his palate, finding all excellent tastes the world has, comprehended in one single fruit, the Pine. And would not any Prince be content to reduce his base coyne, into Ingots of pure gold? And so much shall serve touching the *Barbadoes*.

Some men I have known in *England*, whose bodies are so strong and able to endure cold, as no weather fits them so well as frost and snow; such Iron bodies would be fit for a Plantation in *Russia*: For, there is no tracing Hares under the Line, nor sliding on the Ice under either



Tropick. Others there are that have heard of the pleasures of *Barbadoes*, but are loth to leave the pleasures of *England* behind them. These are of sluggish humour, and are altogether unfit for so noble an undertaking; but if any such shall happen to come there, he shall be transmitted to the innumerable Armie of Pismires, and Ants, to sting him with such a reproof, as he shall wish himselfe any where rather then amongst them. So much is a sluggard detested in a Countrey, where Industry and Activity is to be exercised. The Dwarfse may come there, and twice a year vie in competition with the Giant: for set them both together upon a level superficies, and at noon, you shall not know by their shadowes who is the tallest man.

The voluptuous man, who thinks the day not long enough for him to take his pleasure. Nor the sleepe man, who thinks the longest night too short for him to dream out his delights, are not fit to repose and solace themselves upon this Island; for in the whole compass of the Zodiack, they shall neither find *St. Barnabies* day, or *St. Lucies* night, the Sun running an even course, is there an indifferent Arbitrer of the differences which are between those two Saints, and like a just and cleer sighted Judge, reconciles those extreames to a Medium of 12 and 12 hours, which equality of time is utterly inconsistent to the humours and dispositions of these men.

But I speak this, to such as have their fancies so Aereal, and refin'd as not to be pleased with ordinary delight; but think to build and settle a felicity here: above the ordinary level of mankind. Such Spirits, are too volatile to fix on business; and therefore I will leave them out, as useless in this Common-wealth. But such as are made of middle earth, and can be content to wave those pleasures, which stand as Blocks, and Portcullisses, in their way; and are indeed the main Remora's in their passage to their profits. Such may here find moderate delights, with moderate labour, and those taken moderately will conduce much to their healths; and they that have industry, to imploy that well, may make it the Ladder to climb to a high degree of Wealth and opulencie, in this sweet Negotiation of Sugar, provided they have a competent stock to begin with; such I mean as may settle them in a Sugar-work, and less then 14000*l.* sterling, will not do that: in a Plantation of 500 acres of land, with a proportionable stock of Servants, Slaves, Horses, Camels, Cattle, Assinigoes, vvith an Ingenio, and all other houseing, thereunto belonging; such as I have formerly nam'd.

But one vvill say, vvhy should any man that has 14000*l.* in his purse need to run so long a Risco, as from hence to the *Barbadoes*: vvhen he may live vvith ease and plenty at home; to such a one I answer, that every drone can sit and eat the Honey of his ovvn Hive: But he that can by his ovvn Industry, and activity, (having youth and strength to friends,) raise his fortune, from a small beginning to a very great one, and in his passage to that, do good to the publique, and be charitable to the poor, and this to be accomplished in a fevv years, deserves much more commendation and applause. And shall find his bread, gotten by his painful and honest labour and industry, eat  
 fvveter



sweeter by much, than his that onely minds his ease, and his belly.

Now having said this much, I hold it my duty, to give what directions I can, to further any one that shall go about to improve his stock, in this way of Adventure; and if he please to hearken to my directions, he shall find they are no Impossibilities, upon which I ground my Computations: the greatest will be, to find a friend for a Correspondent, that can be really honest, faithful and industrious, and having arriv'd at that happiness, (vvhich is the chiefest,) all the rest vvill be easie; and I shall let you see that vvithout the help of Magick or Inchantment, this great purchase of 14000 l. vvill be made vvith 3000 l. stock, and thus to be ordered.

One thousand pound is enough to venture at first, because vve that are here in *England*, knowv not vvhat commodities they vvant most in the *Barbadoes*, and to send a great Cargo of unnecessary things, vvhere to have them lye upon our hands to loss. This 1000 l. I vvould have thus laid out: 100 l. in Linnen Cloth, as Canvas and Kentings, vvvhich you may buy here in *London*, of French Merchants, at reasonable rates; and you may hire poor Journy-men Taylors, here in the City, that vvill for very small vvages, make that Canvas into Dravvers, and Petticoats, for men and vvomen Negres. And part of the Canvas, and the vvhole of the Kentings, for shirts and dravvers for the Christian men Servants, and Smocks and petticoats for the vvomen. Some other sorts of Linnen, as Holland or Dovvlace, vvill be there very usefull for Shirts and Smocks for the Planters themselves, vvith their Wives and Children. One hundred pounds more I vvould have bestovv'd, part on vvoollen cloath, both fine and course, part on *Devonshire* Carries, and other fashionable stuffs, such as vvill vvell endure wearing. Upon *Monmoth* Caps I would have bestowed 25 l. you may bespeak them there in *Wales*, and have them sent up to *London*, by the waynes at easie rates. Forty pound I think fit to bestow on Irish Ruggs such as are made at *Kilkennie*, and Irish stockings, and these are to be had at St. James's fair at *Bristol*; the stockings are to be worne in the day by the Christian servants, the Ruggs to cast about them when they come home at night, sweating and wearied, with their labour, to lap about them when they rest themselves on their Hamacks at night, than which nothing is more needful for the reasons I have formerly given. And these may either be shipt at *Bristol*, if a ship be ready bound for *Barbadoes*, or sent to *London* by waynes, which is a cheap way of conveyance. Fifty pound I wish may be bestowed on shooes, and some boots to be made at *Northampton*, and sent to *London* in dry fatts by Carts; but a special care must be taken, that they may be made large, for they will shrink very much when they come into hot Climates. They are to be made of several sizes, for men, women and children; they must be kept dry and close, or else the moistness of the Ayre will cause them to mould. Gloves vvill sell vvell there, and I vvould have of all kinds, and all sizes, that are thinne; but the most usefull, are those of tann'd leather, for they vvill vvasht and not shrink in the vvetting, and vvear very long and supple; you may provide your self of these, at *Exeter*, *Ilemister* and *Ilechester* in *Somerset-shire*, at reasonable rates. Fifteen pound I



would bestow in these Commodities. In fashionable Hats and Bands, both black and coloured, of several sises and qualities, I would have thirty pounds bestowed. Black Ribbon for mourning, is much worn there, by reason their mortality is greater; and therefore upon that commodity I would bestow twenty pound; and as much in Coloured; of several sises and colours. For Silks and Sattins, with gold and silver-Lace, we will leave that alone, till we have better advice; for they are casual Commodities.

Having now made provision for the back, it is fit to consider the belly, which having no ears, is fitter to be done for, then talxt to; and therefore we will do the best we can, to fill it with such provisions, as will best brook the Sea, and hot Climates: Such are Beef, well pickled, and well conditioned, in which I would bestow 100l. In Pork 50l. in Pease for the voyage 10l. In Fish, as Ling, Haberdine, Green-fish, and Stock-fish, 40l. In Bisket for the voyage 10l. Cases of Spirits 40l. Wine 150l. Strong Beer 50l. Oyle Olive 30l. Butter 30l. And Candles must not be forgotten, because they light us to our suppers, and our beds.

The next thing to be thought on, is Utensils, and working Toolles, such are whip-Sawes, two-handed Sawes, hand-Sawes, Files of several sises and shapes; Axes, for felling and for hewing; Hatchets, that will fit Carpenters, Joyners, and Coopers; Chisels, but no Mallets, for the wood is harder there to make them: Adzes, of several sizes, Pick-axes, and Mat-hooks; Howes of all sises, but chiefly small ones, to be used with one hand, for with them, the small Negres weed the ground: Plains, Gouges, and Augurs of all sises; hand-Bills, for the Negroes to cut the Canes; drawing-Knives, for Joyners. Upon these Utensils I would bestow 60l. Upon Iron, Steel, and small Iron pots, for the Negroes to boyl their meat, I would bestow 40l. And those are to be had in *Southsex* very cheap, and sent to *London* in Carts, at time of year, when the wayes are drie and hard. Nailes of all sorts, with Hooks, Hinges, and Cramps of Iron; and they are to be had at *Bermingham* in *Staffordshire*, much cheaper then in *London*: And upon that Commodity I would bestow 30l. In Sowes of Lead 20l. in Powder and Shot 20l. If you can get Servants to go with you, they will turn to good accompt, but chiefly if they be Trades-men, as, Carpenters, Joyners, Masons, Smiths, Paviers, and Coopers. The Ballast of the Ship, as also of all Ships that trade there, I would have of Sea-coals, well chosen, for it is a commodity was much wanting when I was there, and will be every day more and more, as the Wood decays: The value I would have bestowed on that, is 50l. which will buy 45 Chauldron, or more, according to the burthen of the Ship. And now upon the whole, I have outstript my computation 145l. but there will be losse in that; for I doubt not, (if it please God to give a blessing to our endeavours) but in twelve or fourteen months, to sell the goods, and double the Cargo; and, if you can stay to make the best of your Market, you may make three for one.

This Cargo, well got together, I could wish to be ship't in good order, about the beginning of *November*, and then by the grace of God, the



the Ship may arrive at the *Barbadoes* (if she make no stay by the way) about the middle of *December*; and it is an ordinary course to sail thither in six weeks: Coming thither in that cool time of the year, your Victuals will be in good condition to be removed into a Store-house, which your Correspondent, (who, I account, goes along with it) must provide as speedily as he can, before the Sun makes his return from the Southern Tropick; for then the weather will grow hot, and some of your Goods, as, Butter, Oyle, Candles, and all your Liquors, will take harme in the remove.

The Goods being stowed in a Ware-house, or Ware houses, your Correspondent must reserve a handsome room for a Shop, where his servants must attend; for then his Customers will come about him, and he must be careful whom he trusts; for, as there are some good, so there are many bad pay-masters; for which reason, he must provide himself of a Horse, and ride into the Country to get acquaintance; and half a dosen good acquaintance, will be able to enform him, how the pulse beats of all the rest: As also by enquiries, he will finde, what prices the Goods bear, which he carries with him, and sell them accordingly, and what valews Sugars bear, that he be not deceived in that Commodity; wherein there is very great care to be had, in taking none but what is very good and Merchantable, and in keeping it drie in good Casks, that no wet or moist aire come to it; and so as he makes his exchanges, and receives in his Sugars, or what other commodities he trades for, they lie ready to send away for *England*, as he finds occasion, the delivering of the one, making room for the other; for Ships will be every month, some or other, coming for *England*. If he can transport all his goods, raised upon the Cargo, in eighteen months, it will be very well. This Cargo being doubled at the *Barbadoes*, that returned back, will produce at least 50 per cent. And then your Cargo, which was 1145*l.* at setting out, and being doubled there to 2290*l.* vwill be at your return for *England* 3435*l.* of vvhich I vwill allow for freight, and all other charges 335*l.* so there remains to account 3100*l.* clear. By vvhich time, I vwill take for granted, that your Correspondent has bargained, and gone through for a Plantation, vvhich vve vwill presuppose to be of five hundred acres, Stock't as I have formerly laid down; (for vve must fix upon one, that our computations may be accordingly) if it be more or less, the price must be answerable, and the Produce accordingly. And therefore as vve began, vve vwill make this our scale, that 14000*l.* is to be paid for a Plantation of 500 acres Stock't. Before this time, I doubt not, but he is also grovvn so vvell vers't in the traffick of the Island, as to give you advice, vvhich Commodities are fittest for your next Cargo; and according to that instruction, you are to provide, and to come your selfe along vwith it.

By this time, I hope, your remaining 1855*l.* by good employment in *England*, is raised to 2000*l.* So then you have 5100*l.* to put into a new Cargo, vvhich I vwould not have you venture in one Bottom. But if it please God, that no ill chance happen, that Cargo of 5100*l.* having then time enough to make your best Market, may very vvell double, & 1000*l.* over; vvhich 1000*l.* I vwill allow to go out for freight,



and all other charges. So then, your Cargo of 5100 l. being but doubled, will amount unto 10200 l. But this Cargo being large, will require three years time to sell; so that if you make your bargain for 14000 l. to be paid for this Plantation, you will be allowed three dayes of payment; the first shall be of 4000 l. to be paid in a year after you are settled in your Plantation; 5000 l. more at the end of the year following, and 5000 l. at the end of the year then next following. And no man will doubt such payment, that sees a visible Cargo upon the Island of 10200 l. and the produce of the Plantation to boot. Now you see which way this purchase is made up, *viz.* 4000 l. the first payment, 5000 l. the second, and so there remains upon your Cargo 1200 l. towards payment of the last 5000 l. and by that time, the profit of your Plantation will raise that with advantage; and then you have your Plantation clear, and freed of all debts. And we will account at the lowest rate, that if two hundred acres of your five hundred, be planted with Canes, and every Acre bear but three thousand weight of Sugar, valuing the Sugar but at three pence per pound, which is thirty seven pound ten shillings every acre, then two hundred acres will produce 7500 l. in sixteen months; that is, fifteen months for the Canes to grow and be ripe, and a month to Cure the Sugar that is made.

But if you stay four months longer, your Muscavado Sugar, which I valued at three pence per pound, will be Whites, and then the price will be doubled, and that you see is 15000 l. Out of which we will abate  $\frac{1}{4}$  part for waste, and for the tops and bottomes of the Pots,

	15000
	3750
	<hr/>
32	11250
<del>15000</del> (3750	2400
<del>4444</del>	<hr/>
	13650

which may be rank'd with the Muscavadoes, and that is 3750 l. and then there remains 11250 l. to which we will adde the value of the Drink that is made of the skimmings, at 120 l. per month, which in twenty months comes to 2400 l. and then the whole revenue will amount unto 13650 l. in twenty months. But this profit must come successively in, as the Sugars are made, and they work all the year, except in *November* and *December*, when the great downfalls of rain come: and if they pave the wayes between the Canes, for the Slids and Affinigoes to passe, they may work then too; for, little else hinders them, but the unpassableness of the wayes.

So then you see, that upon the venturing, and well husbanding of 3000 l. stock, you are settled in a revenue of 682 l. a month, of which months we will account 13 in a year, so that after your work is set in order, and that you will account the yearly revenue, you will find it 8866 l. *per annum.*

Now let us consider what the certain charge will be yearly, to keep



keep the Plantation in the condition we receive it, which we will suppose to be compleatly furnished, with all that is necessary thereunto: And first, of all manner of housing, as convenient dwelling houses, the Mill-house, or Grinding-house where the Sugar is pressed out; the boiling house, with five sufficient Coppers for boiling, and one or two for cooling, with all Utensils, that belong to the Mill, and boiling-house; the filling room, with stantions; the Still-house with two sufficient Stills, and receivers to hold the drink, with Cisterns to all these rooms, for holding liquor, and temper; the Curing house fill'd with stantions, two stories high, and commonly in it seventeen or eighteen hundred pots for curing; the Smiths forge, with room to lay coales, Iron, and Steel; the Carpenter, and Joiners houses, where they lodge and lay their tools, and much of their fine worke; with sufficient store-houses, to lay such provision as we receive from forrain parts, as Beef, Pork, Fish, Turtle; and also to keep our drink which is made of the Sugar, to the repairing of all which, the premises with the Appurtenances, we will allow no less then 500 l. per Annum.

To this, there is yet more to be added: for though we breed both Negres, Horses, and Cattle; yet that increase, will not supply the moderate decayes which we find in all those; especially in our Horses and Cattell, therefore we will allow for that 500 l. Per Annum.

The next thing we are to consider is, the feeding of our servants and slaves, over and above the provisions which the Plantations bear, and that will be no great matter, for they are not often fed with bone-meat; But we will allow to the Christian servants, (which are not above thirty in number,) four barrels of Beef, and as much of Porke yearly, with two barrels of salt Fish, and 500 poor-Johns, which we have from New England, four barrels of Turtle, and as many of pickled Makerels, and two of Herrings, for the Negroes; all which I have computed, and finde they will amount unto 100 l, or thereabouts; besides the freight, which will be no great matter; for you must be sure to have a Factor, both at New England and Virginia, to provide you of all Commodities those places afford, that are useful to your Plantation; or else your charge will be treble. As from New England, Beef, Porke, Fish, of all sorts, dried and pickled; from Virginia live-Cattle; Beef and Tobacco; for theirs at Barbadoes is the worst I think that growes in the world; And for Cattle, no place lyes neerer to provide themselves, and the Virginians cannot have a better market to sell them; for an Oxe of 5 l. pound price at Virginia, will yield 25 l. there.

But to go on with our computation: for as we have given order for feeding our people, so we must for their cloathing; and first for the Christians, which we will account to be thirty in number, whereof  $\frac{1}{3}$  shall be men, and  $\frac{2}{3}$  women, that we may make our computation the more exact; and for the men, (which are twenty in number,) we will allow one for the supream Overseer, who is to receive and give directions, to all the subordinate Overseers, which we allow to



be five more; and those he appoints to go out with several Gangs, some ten, some twenty, more or less, according to the ability of the overseer he so imployes; and these are to go out upon several Imployments, as he gives them directions, some to weed, some to plant, some to fall wood, some to cleave it, some to saw it into boards, some to fetch home, some to cut Canes, others to attend the Ingenio, Boyling-house, Still-house; and Cureing-house; some for Harvest, to cut the Maies, (of which we have three Crops every year,) others to gather Provisions, of Bonavist, Maies, Yeames, Potatoes, Cassavie, and dress it at fit times for their dinners and suppers, for the Christian servants; the Negres alwayes dressing their own meat themselves, in their little Pots, which is only Plantines, boyl'd or roasted, and some eares of Maies toasted, at the fire; and now and then a Mackerel a piece, or two Herrings.

The Prime Overseer may very well deserve Fifty pounds *Per Annum*, or the value in such Commodities as he likes, that are growing upon the Plantation; for he is a man that the master may allow sometimes to sit at his own Table, and therefore must be clad accordingly. The other five of the Overseers, are to be accounted in the ranke of Servants, whose freedom is not yet purchased, by their five years service, according to the custome of the Island. And for their cloathing, they shall be allowed three shirts together, to every man for shifts, which will very well last half a year, and then as many more. And the like proportion for drawers, and for shooes, every month a paire, that is twelve pair a year; six pair of stockings yearly, and three *Monmouth* Capps, and for Sundayes, a doublet of Canvas, and a plain band of Holland.

An



*An account of Expences issuing out yearly for Cloathing, for the Christian Servants, both Men and Women, with the Wages of the principal Overseer, which shall be 50 l. sterling, or the value in such Goods as grow upon the Plantation.*

To the five subordinate Overseers, for each mans cloathing.			To the fourteen common servants.		
	l.	s. d.		l.	s. d.
Six shirts, at 4 s. a piece	1	04 0	Six Shirts to each man	1	04 0
Six pair of Drawers, at 2 s.	0	12 0	Six pair of drawers to each man	0	12 0
Twelve pair of Shoes, at 3 s.	1	16 0	Twelve pair of shoes, at 3 s.	1	16 0
Six pair of Linnen or Irish stockings, at 20 d.	0	12 0	Three Monmouth Caps, at 4 s.	0	12 0
Three Monmouth Caps, at 4 s.	0	12 0	Sum totall to each man	4	04 0
Two doublets of Canvas, and six Holland bands	0	15 0	Sum total, of the fourteen servants by the year	58	16 0
Sum totall for each man	5	9 0			
Sum total for the five Overseers	27	5 0			

Now for the ten women servants, we will dispose of them, thus:  
Four to attend in the house, and those to be allowed, as followeth in the first Columnne, viz.

The four that attend in the house to each of them			The other six that weed, and do the common work abroad yearly.		
	l.	s. d.		l.	s. d.
Six smocks, at 4 s. a piece	1	04 0	Four smocks, at 4 s. a piece	0	16 0
Three petticoats, at 6 s.	0	18 0	Three petticoats, at 5 s. a piece	0	15 0
Three waistcoats, at 3 s.	0	09 0	Four coifs, at 12 d. a piece	0	04 0
Six coifs or caps, at 18 d. a piece	0	09 0	Twelve pair of shoes, at 3 s.	1	16 0
Twelve pair of shoes, at 3 s.	1	16 0	Sum is	3	11 0
Sum is	4	16 0	Sum totall of the six common women servants	21	06 0
Sum total of the four women that attend in the house	19	4 0			

Thirty Rug Govvnes for these thirty servants, to cast about them when they come home hot and vvearied, from their vwork, and to sleep in at nights, in their Hamock, at 25 s. a Govvn or mantle. } 37 10 0

Now for the Negres, vvhich vve vwill account to be a hundred of both Sexes, vve vwill divide them equally; The fifty men shall be allowed yearly but three pair of Canvas dravvers a piece, vvhich at 2 s. a pair, is 6 s.

The women shall be allowed but two petticoats a piece yearly, at 4 s. a piece, which is 8 s. yearly.

So the yearly charge of the fifty men Negres, is	15 00 0
And of the women	20 00 0
Sum is	35 00 0



Now to sum up all, and draw to a conclusion, we will account, that for the repairing dilapidations, and decayes in the houseing, and all Utensills belonging thereunto,

	l.	s.	d.
We will allow yearly to issue out of the Profits, that arise upon the Plantation	500	00	00
As also for the moderate decayes of our Negres, Horses, and Cattle, notwithstanding all our Recruits by breeding all those kinds	500	00	00
For forraign provisions of victualls for our servants and some of our slaves, we will allow yearly	100	00	00
For wages to our principal Overseer yearly	50	00	00
By the Abstract of the charge of Cloathing the five subordinate Overseers yearly.	27	05	00
By the abstract of Cloathing the remaining 14 men-servants yearly	58	16	00
By the Abstract of Cloathing four women servants that attend in the house	19	04	00
By the Abstract of the remaining six women-servants, that do the common work abroad in the fields.	21	06	00
The charge of thirty Rug Gowns for these thirty servants	37	10	00
By the abstract of the cloathing of fifty men-Negrees	15	00	00
By the abstract for the cloathing of fifty women-Negrees	20	00	00

Sum total of the expences is 1349 01 00

Sum total of the yearly profits of the Plantation 8866 00 00

So the clear profit of this Plantation of 500 acres of land amounts to yearly 7516 19 00

A large Revenue for so small a sum as 14000 l. to purchase, where the Seller does not receive two years value by 1000 l. and upwards; and yet gives dayes of payment.

I have been believed in all, or the most part, of my former descriptions and computations, concerning this Island, and the wayes to attain the profits that are there to be gathered; but when I come to this point, no man gives me credit, the business seeming impossible, that any understanding man, that is owner of a Plantation of this value, should sell it for so inconsiderable a sum: and I do not at all blame



blame the incredulity of these persons ; for, if experience had not taught me the contrary, I should undoubtedly be of their persuasion. But lest I should, by an overweening opinion, hope, that my experience (which is only to my self) should mislead any man besides his reason, which every knowing man ought to be guided and governed by, I will without straining or forcing a reason, deliver a plain and naked truth, in as plain language, as is fitting such a subject, which I doubt not will persuade much in the business.

'Tis a known truth there, that no man hath attained to such a fortune as this, upon a small beginning, that hath not met with many rubs and obstacles in his way, and sometimes fallings back, let his pains and industry be what it will : I call those fallings back, when either by fire, which often happens there, or death of Cattle, which is as frequent as the other ; or by losses at Sea, which sometimes will happen, of which I can bring lively instances : If either of these misfortunes fall, it stands in an equal ballance, whether ever that man recover, upon whom these misfortunes fall : But, if two of these happen together, or one in the neck of another, there is great odds to be laid, that he never shall be able to redeem himself, from an inevitable ruine ; For, if fire happen, his stock is consumed, and sometimes his house ; if his Cattle dye, the work stands still, and with either of these his credit falls ; so as, if he be not well friended, he never can entertain a hope to rise again.

These toyles of body and mind, and these misfortunes together, will depress and wear out the best spirits in the world, and will cause them to think, what a happy thing it is, to spend the remainder of their lives in rest and quiet in their own Countries. And I do believe, there are few of them, whose minds are not over-ballanc'd with avarice and lucre, that would not be glad to sell good penni-worths, to settle themselves quietly in *England*. Besides the casualties which I have named, there is yet one of nearer concern than all the rest, and that is, their own healths, than which nothing is more to be valued ; for, sicknesses are there more grievous, and mortality greater by far than in *England*, and these diseases many times contagious : And if a rich man, either by his own ill dyet or distemper, or by infection, fall into such a sickness, he will find there a plentiful want of such remedies, as are to be found in *England*. Other reasons, and strong ones, they have, that induce them to hanker after their own Country, and those are, to enjoy the company of their old friends, and to raise up Families to themselves, with a Sum which they have acquired by their toyle and industry, and often hazards of their lives, whose beginnings were slight and inconsiderable ; and what can be a greater comfort, both to themselves and their friends, than such an enjoyment ? But I speak not this to discourage any man, that hath a mind to improve his Estate, by adventuring upon such a Purchase ; for, though the Planter, by long and tedious pain and industry, have worn out his life, in the acquist of his fortune ; yet the Buyer, by his purchase, is so well and happily seated, as he need endure no such hardships, but may go on in the managing his business, with much ease, and some pleasure ; and in a dozen years, return back with a



very plentiful fortune, and may carry with him from *England*, better remedies for his health, then they, who for a long time had neither means to provide, nor money to purchase it; for though some Simples grow there, that are more proper to the bodies of the Natives, than any we can bring from forreign parts, and no doubt would be so for our bodies too, if we knew the true use of them; yet wanting that knowledge, we are fain to make use of our own.

But when able and skilful Physitians shall come, whose knowledge can make the right experiment and use of the vertues of those Simples that grow there, they will no doubt find them more efficacious, and prevalent to their healths, than those they bring from forraign parts. For certainly every Climate produces Simples more proper to cure the diseases that are bred there, than those that are transported from any other part of the world: such cure the great Physitian to mankind takes for our convenience.

Somewhat I have said of the diseases that reign in general in that Island, but have fallen on no particular, though I have felt the power and Tyranny of it upon mine own body, as much as any man that hath past through it to death, though it pleased the merciful God to raise me up again: for I have it to shew under the hand of Colonel *Thomas Asotiford*, in whose house I lay sick, that he saw me dead without any appearance of life, three several times, not as in sounding, but dying fits, and yet recovered at last.

To tell the tedious particulars of my sickness, and the several drenches our ignorant Quacksalvers there gave me, will prove but a troublesome relation, and therefore I am willing to decline it: Only this much, that it began with a Fever, and as it is the custome of that disease there to cause bindings, costiveness, and consequently gripings and tortions in the bowels, so it far'd with me, that for a fortnight together had not the least evacuation by Seige, which put me to such torment, as in all that time I have not slept; and want of that, wore me out to such a weaknesse, as I was not then in a condition to take any remedy at all. This excessive heat within begat a new torment within me, the Stone; which stopt my passage so as in fourteen dayes together no drop of water came from me; But contrary to my expectation, God Almighty sent me a Remedy for that, and such a one as all the whole world cannot afford the like: for in ten houres after I took it, I found my self not only eas'd, but perfectly cur'd of that torment, at least for the present, for it not only broke, bur brought away all the Stones and Gravel that stopt my passage, so that my water came as freely from me as ever, and carryed before it such quantities of broken stones and gravel, as in my whole life I have not seen the like. About three weekes or a month after this, I became in the same distress, and felt the like torment, whereupon I took the same medicine; which gave me the same help. Now if it did thus to a body so worn out as mine, where Nature was so decayed as it could operate little to the cure; what will this Medicine do, when it meets with such Organs as can contribute mainly to assist it? But I give the Reader but a sooty Relation of my  
Maladies



Maladies, and indeed very unfit for his cares, yet when I shall prescribe the Remedy, which may happen to concern him, I may hope to make him amends : for truly my touching upon the disease, was but to usher in the cure, which shall follow close after, and 'tis briefly thus. Take the Pisse of a green Turtle which lives in the Sea, dry it with a moderate heat, pound it in a Morter to powder, and take of this as much as will lye upon a shilling, in Beer or the like, Ale or Whitewine, and in a very short time it will do the cure. If this secret had been known in *Europe* but a dozen years since, no doubt we had been well stor'd with it by this time, for 'tis to be had both at the *Charibby* and *Lucayick* Islands, where these fishes abound.

Yet so slow was my recovery of the main sickness, and my relapses so frequent, as I was ever and anon, looking out to meet my familiar Companion Death ; my Memory and Intellect suffering the same decays with my body, for I could hardly give an account of : of the time I was sick ; but as my health increast, they return'd. In three months more I was able to ride down to the Bridge, where finding a Ship bound for *England*, I agreed for my passage and dyet by the way ; and (as the manner of all Masters of Ships is) he made me large promises of plentiful provisions aboard, as Beeffe, Porke, Pease, Fish, Oyle, Bisket, Beere, and some Wine. This Ship had been fifteen months out of *England*, and had traded at *Guinny* and *Binnny* for Gold and Elephants teeth, but those commodities taking up but little room, the Captain made the *Barbadoes* in his way home, intending to take in his full lading of Sugar, and such other Commodities as that Island afforded, and so being ready to set Sayle, my self and divers other Gentlemen embarkt, upon the fifteenth of *April* 1650, at Twelve a Clock at night, which time our Master made choyce of that he might the better pass undesery'd by a well known Pirate, that had for many dayes layn hovering about the Island, to take any Ships that traded for *London*, by vertue of a Commission as he pretended, from the Marques of *Ormond*. This Pirate was an Irish man, his name *Plunquet*, a man bold enough ; but had the Character of being more merciless and cruel, than became a valiant man. To confirm the first part of his Character ; he took a Ship in one of the Harbors of the Island, out of which he furnisht himself with such things as he wanted, but left the carkase of the Vessel to floate at large. He had there a Frigot of about 500 Tunns, and a small Vessel to wait on her, but the night covered us from being discerned by him, and so we came safely off the Island. About a fortnight after we had been at Sea, our Master complained that his men had abus'd him, and (for some Commodities useful to themselves) had truckt away the greatest part of his Bisket ; so that instead of bread, we were serv'd with the sweepings and dust of the Bread-Roome, which caused a general complaint of all the Passengers, but no Remedy : our Pease must now supply that want, which with some Physicall perswasion of the Master, that it was hearty and binding as bread, we rested satisfied, with this Motto, *Patience upon force*. The next thing wanting, was Fish, an excellent food at Sea ; and the want of that troubled us much, yet the same



same Remedy must serve as for the other, Patience. The next thing wanting was Porke ; and the last, Beere, which put us clean out of Patience ; so that now our staple food of the Ship, was onely Beefe, a few Pease, and for drink, water, that had been fifteen months out of *England* : finding how ill we were accommodated, we desired the Master to put in at *Fiall*, one of the Islands of *Azores*, a little to refresh our selves, which Island was not much out of our way ; but the Master loth to be at the charge of re-victualling, and loss of time, refus'd to hearken to us ; and being a request much to his disadvantage, slighted us, and went on, till he was past recovery of those Islands, and then a violent storm took us, and in that storm a sad accident, which happened by meanes of a Portugal, who being a Seaman, and trusted at the Helme, who though he have a compass before him, yet is mainly guided by the Quarter Master that Conns the Ship above, upon the Quarter Deck ; whose Direction the Portugal mistook, being not well vers't in the English tongue, and so steer'd the Ship, so neer the wind, that she came upon her staves, which caused such a fluttering of the Sayles, against the Masts, (the Wind being extream violent) as they tore all in pieces ; Nor was there any other Sayles in the Ship, all being spent in the long voyage to *Guinny* ; nor any thread in the ship, to mend them, so that now the Master (though too late) began to repent him of not taking our Counsel to go to *Fiall*.

But how to redeem us out of this certain ruine, neither the Master, nor his Mates could tell ; for though the Winds blew never so faire, we lay still at Hull ; and to make use of the Tyde, in the Maine, was altogether vaine and hopelesse. Our Victuals too, being at a very low ebb, could not last us many dayes. So that all that were in the ship, both Sea-men and Passengers, were gazing one upon another, what to doe when our small remainder of provision came to an end. But the Sea-men, who were the greater number, resolv'd, the Passengers should be drest and eaten, before any of them should goe to the Pot ; And so the next thing to be thought on was, which of the Passengers should dye first, for they were all design'd to be eaten : So they resolved upon the fattest and healthfullest first, as likeliest to be the best meat, and so the next, and next, as they ate Cherries, the best first : In this Election I thought my self secure, for my body being nothing but a bagg-full of Hydro-pick humours, they knew not which way to drest me, but I should dissolve and come to nothing in the Cooking ; At last the Cooper took me into his consideration, and said, that if they would hearken to him, there might be yet some use made of me ; and that was in his opinion the best ; that seeing my body was not of a consistence to satishie their hunger, it might serve to quench their thirst. So I saying a short prayer against drought and thirst, remain'd in expectation of my doome with the rest ; So merry these kind of men can make themselves, in the midst of dangers, who are so accustomed to them ; and certainly those men, whose lives are so frequently



frequently exposed to such hazards, do not set that value upon them as others, who live in a quiet security; yet, when they put themselves upon any noble action, they will sell their lives at such a rate, as none shall out-bid them; and the custome of these hazards, makes them more valiant then other men; and those amongst them, that do found their courage upon honest grounds, are certainly valiant in a high perfection.

At last, a little Virgin, who was a passenger in the Ship, stood up upon the quarter deck, like a she-Worthy, and said, that if they would be rul'd by her, she would not only be the contriver, but the acter of our deliverance. At whose speech, we all gave a strict attention, as ready to contribute our help to all she commanded; which was, that the Ship-Carpenter should make her a Distaffe and Spindle, and the Saylers combe out some of the Occome: with which instruments and materials, she doubted not, but to make such a quantity of thread, as to repair our then useles Sailes; which accordingly she did, and by her vertue (under God) we held our lives.

Though such an accident as this; and such a deliverance, deserve a gratefull commemoration; yet, this is not all the use we are to make of it, somewhat more may be considered, that may prevent danger for the future; and that is, the great abuse of Captaines and Masters of Ships, who promise to their Passengers, such plenty of victuals, as may serve them the whole voyage: But, before they be half way, either pinch them of a great part, or give them that which is nastie and unwholsome. And therefore I could wish every man, that is to go a long voyage, to carry a reserve of his own, of such viands, as will last, and to put that up safe; for, if it be not under lock and key, they are never the neer; for, the Saylers will as certainly take it, as you trust it to their honesties: Complaine to the Master, and you find no remedy. One thing I have observed, Let a Sayler steal any part of the Ships provision, he shall be sure to have severe punishment; but, if from a Passenger, though it concern him never so neerly, his remedy is to be laughed at. These enormities are fit to be complained on at the Trinity-house, that some redress may be had; for, the abuses are grievous.

Out of this danger at Sea, it has pleased the God of all mercy to deliver me, as also from a grievous and tedious sickness on land, in a strange Country; For which, may his holy Name be eternally blessed and praised, for ever and ever.

I am now cast in Prison, by the subtle practices of some, whom I have formerly called Friends: But the eternal and merciful God has been pleased to visit and comfort me, and to raise me up such friends, as have kept me from cold and hunger, whose charities in an Age, where cruelties and tyrannies are exercised in so high a measure, may be accounted a prodigie. But, I doubt not of my release out of this restraint, by the power of him,  
 I i  
 who



who is able to do all in all. For, as *David* said to *Saul*, that God, who had delivered him out of the paw of the Lion, and out of the paw of the Bear, would deliver him from that uncircumcised Philistine, *Goliath* of *Gath*: So may I now say, that God, which has delivered me from a sickness to death, on land, and from shipwreck and hazards at Sea, will also deliver me from this uncircumcised Philistine, the *Upper Bench*, than which, the burning fire of a Feavor, nor the raging waves of the Sea, are more formidable. But, we have seen and suffered greater things. And when the great Leveller of the world, Death, shall run his progress, all Estates will be laid even.

After this, the Lord's will be done. At which time, the Lord will deliver me from this Philistine, the *Upper Bench*, and from all other dangers.

*Mors Sceptra Ligonibus aequat.*

Death is equal to the sceptre of the Lord. The Lord will deliver me from this Philistine, the *Upper Bench*, and from all other dangers.

Though I am a sinner, yet I am a creature of God. I am a creature of God, and I am a creature of God. I am a creature of God, and I am a creature of God. I am a creature of God, and I am a creature of God.

Of the nature of the ship, and of the nature of the ship. The ship is a creature of God, and the ship is a creature of God. The ship is a creature of God, and the ship is a creature of God. The ship is a creature of God, and the ship is a creature of God.

A ship is a creature of God, and a ship is a creature of God. A ship is a creature of God, and a ship is a creature of God. A ship is a creature of God, and a ship is a creature of God.

Of the nature of the ship, and of the nature of the ship. The ship is a creature of God, and the ship is a creature of God. The ship is a creature of God, and the ship is a creature of God. The ship is a creature of God, and the ship is a creature of God.

I am now in the ship, and I am now in the ship. I am now in the ship, and I am now in the ship. I am now in the ship, and I am now in the ship.

Of the nature of the ship, and of the nature of the ship. The ship is a creature of God, and the ship is a creature of God. The ship is a creature of God, and the ship is a creature of God. The ship is a creature of God, and the ship is a creature of God.



# THE CONTENTS

Of the several things mentioned in this

## HISTORY.

<i>A View of Porto Sancto, Madeira's, and Desertes.</i>	pag. 2.	<i>The like of a Plantation near the Sea.</i>	pag. 39.
<i>A View of Bonavilla, Isle of May and Palma.</i>	pag. 3.	<i>Commodities exported and imported.</i>	pag. 40.
<i>Hunting and Hawking at Sea.</i>	pag. 4.	<i>What materials grow on the Island, fit to build with.</i>	pag. 41.
<i>Shark and Pilot fish.</i>	pag. 5.	<i>The number and nature of the Inhabitants.</i>	pag. 43.
<i>Carvil, a fish that sails.</i>	pag. 6.	<i>A combination among the Servants, to kill their Masters.</i>	pag. 45.
<i>Observations upon the Ship's way, as also the treachery of Bernardo, a Portugal.</i>	pag. 7.	<i>Reasons why the Negroes can plot no Massacres, upon their Masters.</i>	pag. 46.
<i>The first sight of the Island of Saint Jago.</i>	pag. 8.	<i>Negroes pastime upon Sundayes, and their aptness to learn Arts.</i>	pag. 48.
<i>Description of the Bay there, which they call the Pry.</i>	pag. 9.	<i>The Planters will not allow their Slaves to be Christians.</i>	pag. 50.
<i>The Padre Vadago's house and entertainment.</i>	pag. 10.	<i>Observations upon the shapes of the Negroes.</i>	pag. 51.
<i>Our landing on the Island, and what hapned to us there.</i>	pag. 13.	<i>A plot of some Negroes, to burn the Ingenio, and the plot discovered by some of their own Country-men, who were honest and noble.</i>	pag. 53.
<i>There are seven Islands more, which are neighbours to this.</i>	pag. 18.	<i>Observations upon the Indians.</i>	pag. 54.
<i>The first sight of the Barbadoes.</i>	pag. 21.	<i>Somewhat of the Planters themselves.</i>	pag. 55.
<i>The Island first discovered by a ship of Sir William Curteen's.</i>	p. 23.	<i>Tame Beasts, which are of great use to the Planters, as, Camels, Horses, Bulls, Oxen, Cowes, Assinigoes, Hogs, Sheep, Goats.</i>	pag. 58.
<i>The Scituation of the Island.</i>	pag. 25.	<i>Birds of all sorts.</i>	pag. 60.
<i>The extent and length of dayes.</i>	pag. 26.	<i>Animals and Insects.</i>	pag. 61.
<i>Temperature of the air.</i>	pag. 27.	<i>Crabs that come and dwell upon the Land.</i>	pag. 65.
<i>How watered.</i>	pag. 28.	<i>Several Trees growing upon the Island, and first of the poysonous trees and Plants.</i>	pag. 66.
<i>Meat and drink for supportation of life.</i>	pag. 29.	<i>Several kinds of Fruit-trees.</i>	pag. 69.
<i>Bread and drink.</i>	pag. 31.	<i>Trees</i>	
<i>Several sorts of meat.</i>	pag. 33.		
<i>The manner of killing a Turtle.</i>	pag. 36.		
<i>Victuals brought from forraign parts.</i>	pag. 37.		
<i>A Feast of an inland Plantation.</i>	pag. 38.		



## The Contents.

Trees of mixt kinds.	pag. 72.	The voluptuous nor lazy persons.	are not fit to inhabit on this Island.
Timber trees of several kinds.	pag. 73.		pag. 108.
The Palmet Royal described.	pag. 75.	The value of a Plantation Stockt of	five hundred acres of Land, whereof
Plants that bear fruit.	pag. 79.	two hundred for Canes, to be sold for	14000 l.
The Pine described.	pag. 82.		ibid.
Sugar Canes, with the manner of		How this purchase of 14000 l. by	providence and good husbandry, may
planting, growth, time of ripeness,		be made with 3000 l.	109.
with the whole process of Sugar-ma-		The yearly revenue of this Planta-	tion, being once set in an orderly
king, both Muscadadoes and Whites.	pag. 84.	course, will amount unto 8866 l.	pag. 112.
The manner of distilling the skim-		An Estimate of the expence, that	will issue out yearly to keep this Plan-
ings of the Coppers, of which we make		tation in good order, as you first recei-	ved it, which we will presuppose to be
the strong drink, which the Planters	pag. 92.	completely furnished with all things.	P. 113.
An estimate of the value of the		The account ballanced, the yearly	Revenue will amount unto 7516 l.
Sugar made upon this Island in	pag. 95.	19 s.	P. 116.
twenty months.		An Objection answered, how it	comes to pass, that Plantations of so
The Withs described.	pag. 96.	great a yearly value, can be purchased	with so little money.
Caves, and the description of their			P. 116.
largeness.	pag. 98.	somewhat of the Diseases of the	Country, as also of the Physicians.
The use of Liam-hounds.	ibid.		P. 118.
Aloes growing there.	ibid.	An incomparable medicine for the	Stone.
The flower of the Moon.	pag. 99.		ibid.
English Herbs and Roots.	ib.	Plumquet, a great Pirate, took	a ship in one of the Bayes.
Strength of the Island by Nature			P. 119.
to Sea-ward.	pag. 100.	I Embarked, and set sail for Eng-	land, the fifteenth of April, 1650.
As also within Land.	ibid.		ibid.
How Governed, and how Divided.	ibid.	The abuses of the Captains and	Masters of ships, that promise large
No Mines in this Island.	P. 101.	provision of Victual and Drink to	their passengers; and when they need
The Tar River.	ib.	it most, fail them grossely.	ibid.
The ill contrivance of the Planters		A storm at Sea, out of which we	were delivered (under God) by a
houses, as we found them, when first we		little Virgin, being a Passenger in	the Ship.
came there.	pag. 102.		
Directions for better buildings,	P. 103.		
A survey of the pleasures and pro-			
fits, commodities and incommunities,			
sickness and healthfullness, of this			
Island, ballanced with those of Eng-	P. 104.		
land.			
The beauties of the Heavens, and			
how much they transcend those of far-	P. 106.		
ther distances from the line.			



